hajj

the Inviolable Place of Worship, which
We have appointed for mankind together, the dweller therein
and the nomad: KORAN

Ali Shariati's

hajj: reflections on its rituals

Translated by
Laleh Bakhtiar

مؤسسه انتشارات بعثت

Rc. ۱۵۰

This book was written by the Shaheed Dr. Ali Shariati in 1971.

"Verily, the first house made for the people is the one at Makkah, blessed, and a guidance for (the people) of the world." (3:96)

And as long as you remain "you", there is no place for – you in the sacred area.

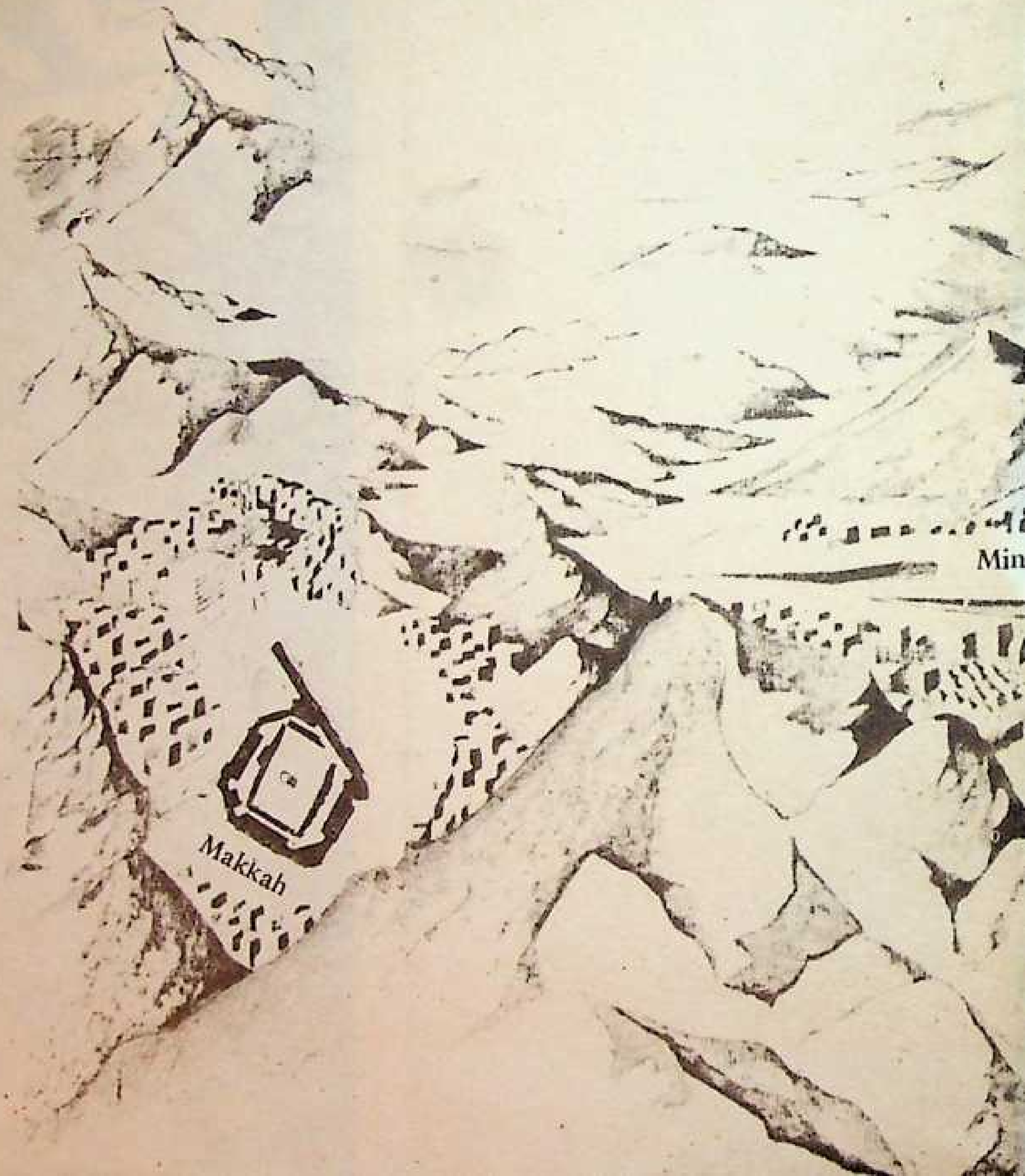
This is the bayt al-'atiq. 'Atiq comes from the root 'itq meaning to free a slave. 'Atiq, freed! A house which is free from private ownership.

The reign of tyrants and rulers. No one has power over

the owner of the house is Allah the household– [illegible]

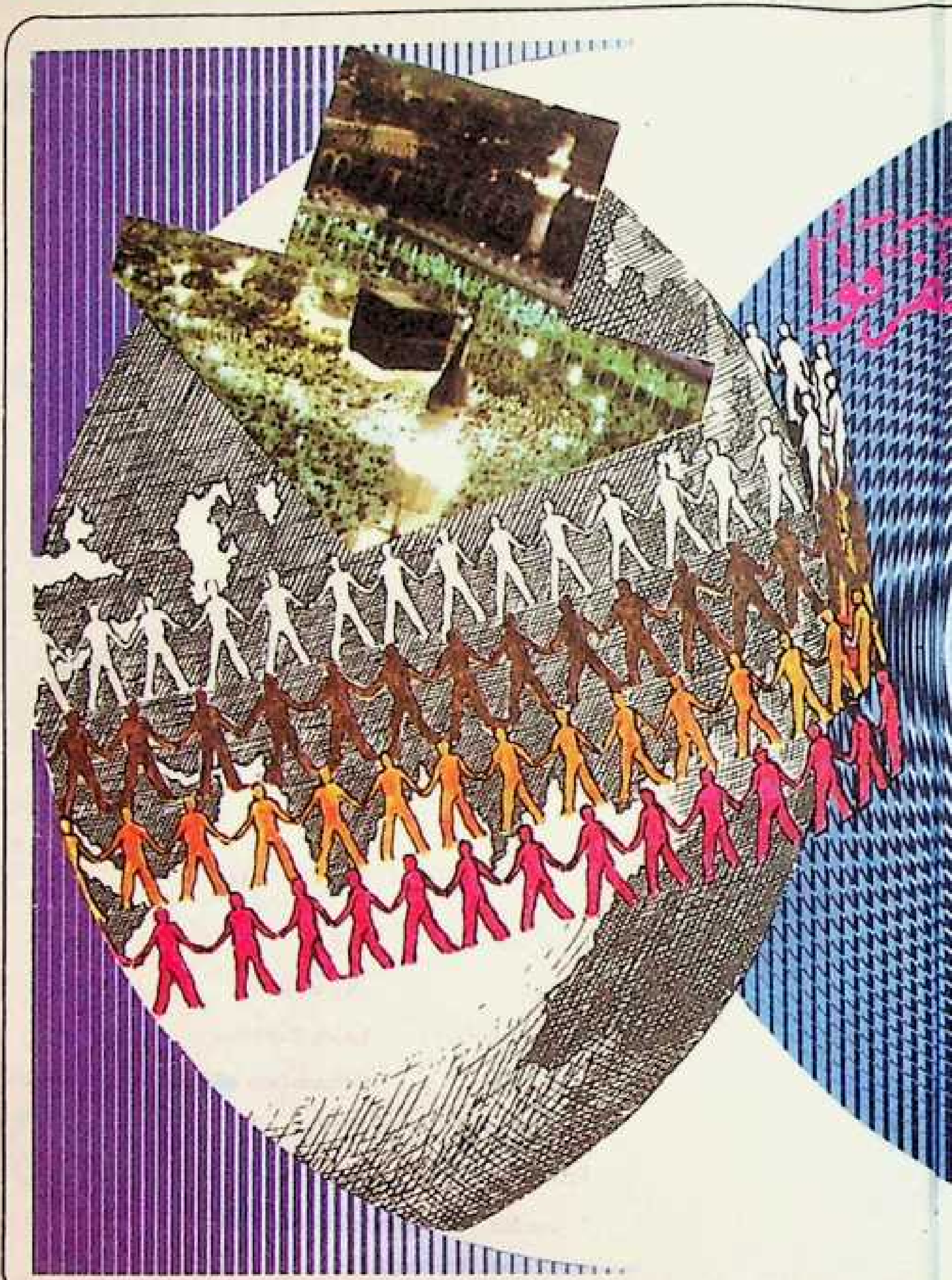
لا اله الا الله محمد رسول الله لا اله الا الله محمد رسول الله

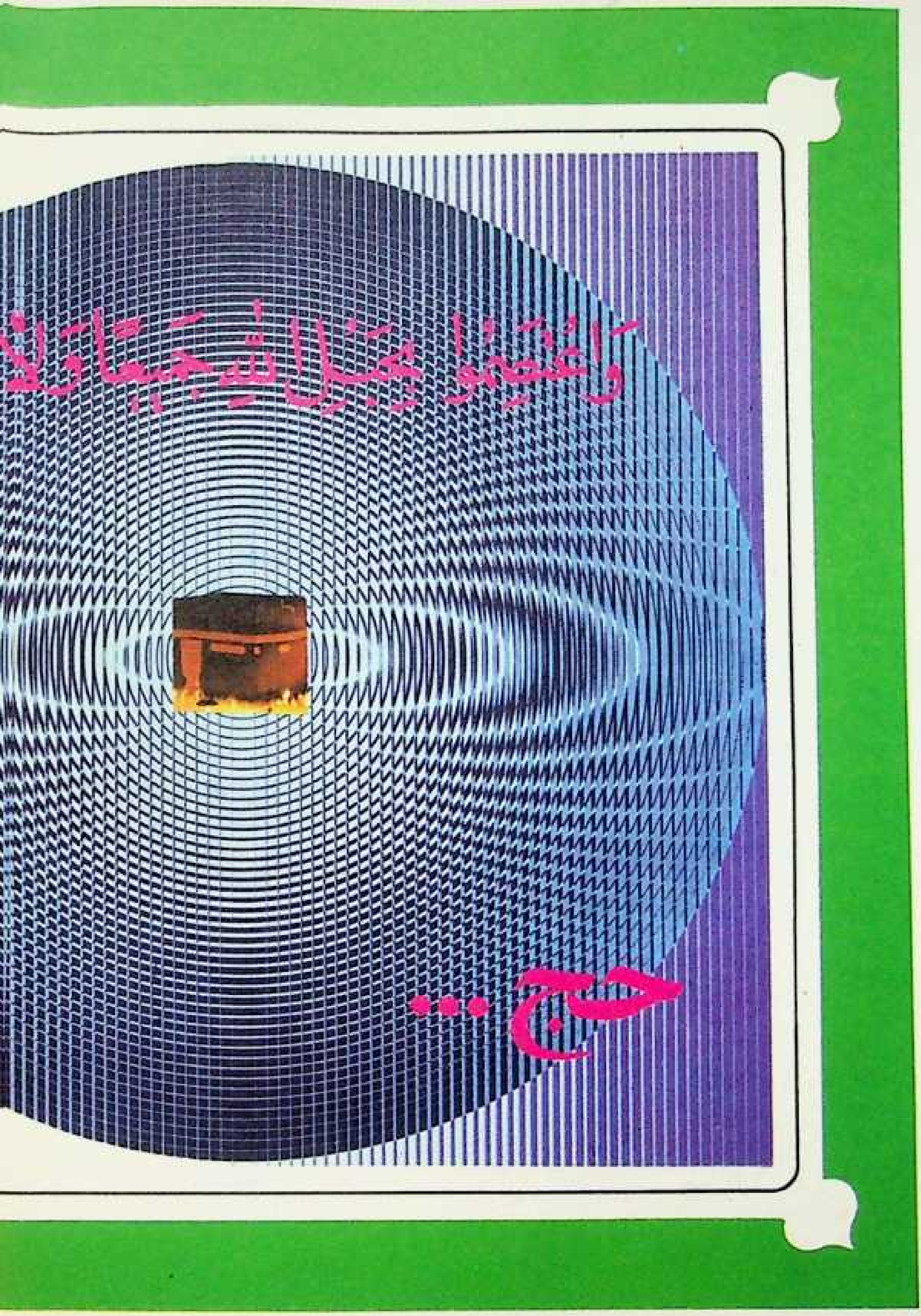
THE PLACES OF THE HAJJ RITUALS



In The Name of Allah

Name of book: Hajj
Auther: Shaheed Dr. Ali Shariati
Translatad by: Laleh Bakhtiar
Published by: Foundation of Be.a.dhat Publication
First Edition in: 1988
Printed in: Said now Press
Number Printed;5000
All Rights Reserved
Tehran, Islamic Republic of Iran




وَاعْتَصِمُوا بِحَبْلِ اللَّهِ جَمِيعًا وَلَا
حج ...

CONTENTS

Acknowledgements vii
INTRODUCTION by Sayyid Gulzar Haidar ix

* * *

A WORD TO THE READER 1
Twenty-three Years in Twenty-three Days 7
The Appointment with Abraham 10
Rituals 10

PART ONE
THE LESSER HAJJ: ÙMRAH

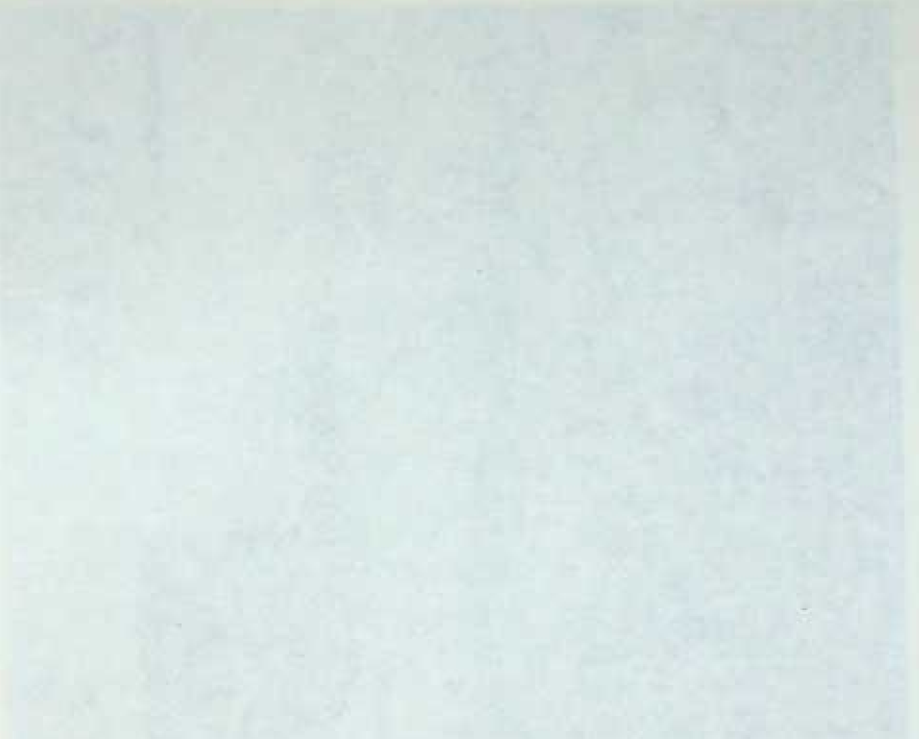
Introduction 19
The Season (*mu'sim*) 23
Ihram at the Place of the Appointed Time (*miqat*) 27
Making Your Intention Known (*niyyah*) 33
The Ritual Prayer in the Place of the Appointed Time 35
Prohibitions (*muharamat*) 39
The Ka'bah 45
Circumambulation (*tawaf*) 53
The Black Stone (*hajar al-aswad*) and the Oath of Allegiance (*bayat*) 57
The Station of Abraham 65
The Search (*sa'y*) 71
Taqsir and the End of the Umrah 81

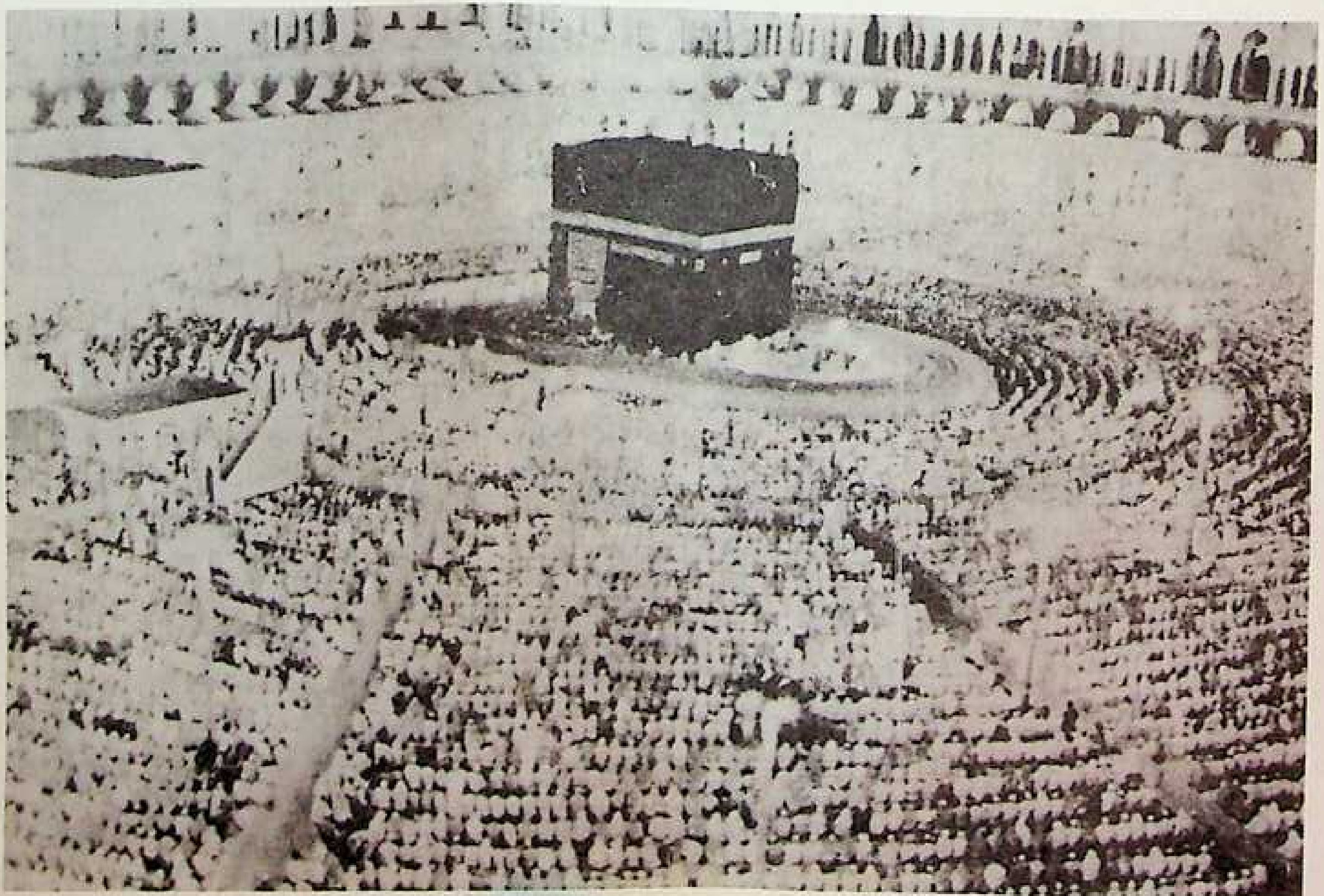
PART TWO
THE GREATER HAJJ: TAMATTU'

Introduction 83
'Arafat 87
Mash'ar 97
Mina 117

- Stoning the Satans 131
- The Sacrifice 133
- The Trinity of Idols 161
- 'Id (the Festival of Sacrifice) 173
- The Pause After the 'Id 175
- A General Look 183
- After the 'Id of Sacrifice: Stoning 185
- The Last Message of Revelation 191
- Conclusion 225
- The Return 227

Notes to the Text 233
Appendix One:
A Biographical Sketch of Ali Shariati 241
Appendix Two:
Sermon of Husayn ibn 'Ali, peace be upon him, at the Hajj 245
Appendix Three:
Imam Husayn's Prayer for the Day of 'Arafat 249
Appendix Four:
Muhammad Iqbal on the Bayt al-Haram 281
Index of the Quranic Verses 285
General Index 289





INTRODUCTION

Muslims of our epoch are in an abject state of loss. Where there should have been life-giving certainty of belief in the Divine Creator and His purpose, there are gnawing doubts and ambivalence. Apologetic about their religion, they excuse themselves in a thousand and one ways. In a state of weakness against the onslaught of theological pluralism, secular humanism, hedonistic materialism, scientific determinism and numerous expressions of man-in-defiance of God, they seek refuge in the romantic versions of their laundered history or in a self-effacing, univeralist neo-mysticism that thrives in greyness achieved in the name of simultaneous tolerance of totally opposing ideologies.

The Holy Quran has been reduced to a book of ceremonies at weddings and burials and a score for lyrical recitation without understanding. The Prophet Muhammad (ص) is treated with either hypocritical reverence that excuses them from the burden of his example or a mere literal model in order to rationalize a wide range of behavior. His life has been reduced to anecdotes, parables, and military campaigns. Both the Revelation as Eternal Quran and the Prophet as the Perfect Man, the Living Quran, are tyrannized and through selective interpretations, defaced beyond recognition. Ali's (ع) proverbial belief in God and his jihad along with the Prophet, Husayn's (ع) steadfastness against hypocritical Islam and martyrdom for Truth and Justice, Zaynab's (ع) cry against tyranny and Ja'far al-Sadiq's (ع) wisdom and jurisprudence have all become victims of sectarian excesses by the antagonists as well as the protagonists.

Muslims, quick to quote their Prophet about the acquisition of knowledge, remain ignorant, even illiterate. From banal to brilliant, they speak of 'ummah' , its oneness, its indivisibility and its common destiny and yet they are split among forty-five nation states who mimic the ceremonies of the United Nations and carry on their intrigues and vendettas reminiscent of the Age of Ignorance (*jahiliyyah*). Totally immersed in the secular developmental paradigm, completely convinced that 'contemporary reality' demands allegiance to either one or the other big powers, they treat their Islam as an outdated set of rituals to which the masses are historically addicted. Deep down they know that Islam must be contained within the boundaries of the beautiful mosques and must not be allowed to rise from the prayer rug.

Their 'scholars' and 'religious thinkers' are kept occupied in internally neutralized symposia and hastily formed think tanks.

The governors, policy makers and even teachers are professional mercenaries who are quick to plead ignorance and even disgust with the realm of Islam.

The study of Islam has been reduced to institutes of 'Islamic Studies ' that are busy serving either the non-Muslim orientalists who pose as objective scholars or are employed by the governments who are in need of speechwriters good at hiding any policy or action with 'Islamic wrappings'.

Islamic scholarship, worthy of its title, has been at best crippled and made anemic. With very few exceptions, the naive are being led by the semi-ignorant; charlatans are posing as Islamic leaders; yesterday's loyal servants of the enemy have changed their garb , memorized some verses and, ad nauseum, talk of an Islamic renaissance. Their slogans are hollow; their hearts are weak; and their souls have been sold to many gods.

The 'Muslim nation', while it speaks of 'pan-ummatic' goals, is entangled in a myriad of internal contradictions. It has no identity, no selfhood, no oneness. It has wrapped the Quran in an embroidered cloth and shelved it. It has imprisoned the Prophet to remote memory and forgotten its covenant with God. With its head comfortably in the lap of a God-less enchantress, in a materialistic trance, it daydreams of the Prophet's Madinah, long gone, or a future 'Islamopolis', still uncharted; it is stranded in a sea of hypocrisy in the darkness of self-deception.

O the Courage that questions Islam about Muslims and
the Muslims about Islam.
O the Wisdom that shatters the facades of ignorance,
and touches the injured spirits.
O the Light that awakens the hopes once again and
brightens the tomorrow of this eclipsed today.

Ali Shariati personifies the lament and light of the grottos of our existence. A bright star, he appeared in our darkness and, lighting a million hearts, attained martyrdom. And now he lives with a presence stronger than life. His courage, his wisdom and his light will contribute to the energy of the Islamic movement in far places and in distant times. Tomorrow's history will judge, with gratitude and reverence, this mujahid of today.

Ali Shariati is a teacher who journeyed hard in search of knowledge and a believer for whom every new realization is only to enhance his certainty in the monotheistic Truth. He is a Muslim in the finest sense of the word. A lover of the beloveds of God and their pious tradition, he has suffered the sufferings of exile and the tortures of prisons to find and uphold the Truth and speak for the rights of the deprived. His words are not hollow literature, nor his thoughts some soap-box polemics. His theories are not speculative nor his ideas mere musings of an arm-chair, angry-man living in remote comfort.

In the isolation of the cell, through the hardships of being hunted, in the agony of exile, in the silence of his prayers and Hajj, not once, but three times, in his perpetual revolution against the 'taghuts' of this world, at home, abroad and everywhere, Shariati reflected upon history, sculpted his ideas and formulated his unique expression of the monotheistic worldview.

He studied the Quran and derived from it a theory of history as well as the lessons for the responsible intellectual. He imagined travelling a whole month with the Beloved Prophet Muhammad (ص) and attained an 'arif's' glimpse of his personality and socio-political wisdom. He rediscovered Abu Dharr Ghiffari (ع) and Salman Farsi (ع) and set standards of devotion to the Prophet and dedication to the Truth. He went back to 'Ali (ع) again and again and wondered about the parallels of his times with ours. He recognized, in his own anguish, the agony and aloneness of 'Ali (ع). He fell in love with Husayn (ع) and in his caravan's dust, he saw his most precious visions of the eternal fountain of martyrdom giving life to the eternal revolutionary movement against tyranny and injustice.

In the lives of Fatimah (ع) and Zaynab (ع), Shariati saw the archetypal Muslim woman, related to one another through Husayn (ع): one, the architect of his being and his character and, the other, the bearer of his martyrdom's message across land and time.

Ali Shariati loved the Prophet and his Family and their pious companions. He saw them as visages of God's intention for man. Though he was born a Shi'ite, he took issue with the overly ritualized, socio-politically castrated and sunk in mourning, as he called it, 'black Shi'ism'. With his brilliant analysis of the early history of Islam, in the overall framework of monotheism and the Prophet Muhammad's (ص) revolution, he presented a radically different view of the martyrdom of Husayn (ع). He saw life and hope for all Islam in the models of the Household of the Prophet. In the struggles of 'Ali (ع) and Abu Dharr (ع), in the battleground of Siffin, in the happenings of Karbala and in the confrontations in the court of Damascus, he saw the process of safeguarding Islam against internal pollution and hypocrisy.

Shariati always transcends the particulars of a historic event and draws the principles that are as eternal as Islam. In this, he does enjoy the methodological support of the Holy Quran itself. In every age, he says, we must behave as if the movement of monotheism is alive, the revolution of Muhammad (ص) is unfolding, 'Ali (ع) stands steadfast, though usually alone, Husayn (ع) calls for ultimate affirmation of the Truth and Zaynab (ع) invites oppressed mankind to unmask the thousand faces of tyranny.

Shariati's *Hajj* is a journey, a directed movement, nay, a transcendent elevation of his very being. He resolved on it repeatedly and returned to invite us to be Abraham-like, to cast away our 'me-ness' , to form a *bayat* (covenant) with the 'Right Hand of God' , to become one ummah and discard multitheism forever, to seek the direction and understand the movement from knowledge to consciousness to love, to will the sacrifice of 'our Isma'il' in order that we acquire the courage to snatch away the sword from the hand of the taghut and never to cease the battle with the 'triple-headed Iblis of Despotism, Exploitation and Deception'.

Perhaps Shariati's most outstanding characteristic, that which distinguishs him and puts him in the ranks of Muhammad Iqbal [1] and Shahid Ustad Murtada Mutahhari[2] is that his faith provided him the courage to study all ideologies without fear or malice. And this is precisely the secret of his being able to, so clearly, arrive at and succinctly express the essence of Islam. He did not have to resort to the double-talk of the apologists or the close-minded sword-swinging of those who can only glorify Islam by damning all else. Shariati compared religions with other religions and came to the conclusion that for One Allah there can only be One Direction, only One Universal Purpose. He studied Iqbal and Jamal al-Din Asadabadi and others before him who had concerned themselves with the plight of the Muslim. He studied western and eastern philosophies. He poured over histories of nations. He wondered about cultures, politics, freedoms, rights, progress and decline. He never lost either courage or curiosity for understanding the nature of man, his destiny, his temptations and his spiritual limits.

From these journeys of the mind and heart, aided by his study of the Quran and contemplation on the nature of Prophethood and Imamate, he came back with the eternal symbols of Cain and Abel, Pharaoh and Moses, Nimrod and Abraham, Abu Sufyan and Muhammad (ص), Mu'awiyah and 'Ali (ع) and of Yazid and Husayn (ع). He discovered then that the addressee of the Divine Revelation was *al-nas*, the people of the earth. He became suspicious of the intellections of the elite. He identified the four prisons of mankind, bemoaned the alienated man, translated the *Wretched of the Earth*, criticized existentialism and exposed Marxism and other western fallacies. But he always returned to his Ka'bah, the center of the constellation of his thoughts: Abrahamic monotheism. And he never saw the revolution of Muhammad (ص), the jihad of 'Ali (ع) and the martyrdom of Husayn (ع) except as visages of monotheism in action against the corresponding types of multitheism.

Of his ideas, he gave generously through his lectures in the universities at Mashhad and Tehran. When they took him away from his students, he wrote for them. When they took the classroom away from him, he went to Husayniyah-i-Irshad[3] and his students flocked around him. When they took away the pen, he recorded his voice. And when he could not perform any aspect of his mission, he, Prophet-like, migrated.

For 'Ali Shariati knowing, being, becoming and struggling for justice were all together and inseparable. He neither submitted nor did he beg favors except from his God.

Unshakable in his belief, disciplined in thought, patient in his suffering, overflowing with love for the Quran and its humanly manifest perfections like Muhammad (ص), Abraham (ع), Hajar (ع), Fatimah (ع), 'Ali (ع), Husayn (ع) and Zaynab (ع), Ali Shariati came very close to the Iqbalian ideal of an Islamic selfhood. He is the Zinda-Rud (Living Stream) of Iqbal's *Javid Namah* and Jalal al-Din Rumi would introduce him such:

> *"...A grain of sand is he*
> *"That soars in heaven and contains a world*
> *"Of longing in his heart. Naught will he see*
> *"Except his inner self and unpledged in his soul*
> *"Unburdened, free; the wide expanse of life*
> *"He swiftly doth traverse, its vastness all.*
> *"In fancy I do call him 'Living Stream'"* [4]

Shariati seems to be the embodiment of Iqbal's exhortation in *Asrar-i-Khudi:*

> *"Be a lover constant in devotion to thy beloved,*
> *"That thou mayst cast thy noose and capture God.*
> *"Sojourn for a while on the Hira of the heart,*
> *"Abandon self and flee to God.*
> *"Strengthened by God, return to thy self*
> *"And break the heads of Lat and Uzza of sensuality.*
> *"By the might of Love evoke an army,*
> *"Reveal thyself on the Faran of Love,*
> *"That the Lord of the Ka'bah may show thee favor*
> *"And interpret to thee the text, "Lo I will appoint a vicegerent on the earth."* [5]

History will judge Shariati's *Hajj* as one of the most important documents of Islamic renaissance. While a great deal of his work had come to us as transcriptions of his lectures, *Hajj,* however, is a book that he was blessed with some time to work on. It is , along with *Martyrdom* and *And Once Again Abu Dharr,* among the most representative of his thought and his philosophy.

It is difficult, if not outright impossible, to subject Shariati's writings to any kind of structural analysis. He obviously did not write for the 'reviewers of scholarly journals and academic publishing houses'. His work is a unique synthesis of the lessons of an inspiring teacher, exhortations of a revolutionary, devotions of an absorbed-believer and theories of a social philosopher who wants to be understood by *al-nas* , the people of this earth. He cannot be paraphrased without a serious loss of the power of his message. With full cognizance of this danger, I outline below what I consider to be the visages of *Hajj,* the book:

1. It presents, on the stage of history, Abraham and Isma'il to construct a model of a Mu'min, the believer, an Imam, the leader and a Mujahid, the soldier of the monotheistic movement. All other characters and settings appear only to make us recognize the deeper significance of the Abrahamic personality. From the revolt in the house of Azar, the idol-maker, to the defiant confrontation with the self-proclaimed god Nimrod, to the exiles, wanderings, separations, supplications and battles with Iblis, we are led to participate in the most awe-inspiring test of belief in the One and Only God Who has no partners, that is, the 'sacrifice of Isma'il' (ع). Abraham (ع) becomes the manifest legacy of monotheistic man's relationship with his God. And what is the reward of all this? The station of the Friend of God, the commission to become figuratively and literally, the architect of the 'House of God' on this earth, the Imamate of the nations of believers, a progeny of Prophets and Messengers and, perhaps, most important of all, eternity in the hearts of mankind through the hajj. When a man believes like Abraham (ع), he lives and leads like Muhammad (ص), is subservient and steadfast like 'Ali (ع) and is ever-prepared to offer his very being like Isma'il (ع) and Husayn (ع).

2. Through *Hajj,* Shariati comments on history's sociopolitical constants. Mankind has always had its Cain, the owner, the landlord, the usurper, the exploiter and the murderer. He rides on the back of Abel, the dispossessed, the peasant, the exploited, the deprived, the robbed and the massacred. The deceitful and cunning 'fox', the coercive and despotic 'wolf' and the greedy and exploitative 'rat' rule over the submissive and humiliated 'lamb', the people. Man becomes the plaything of Iblis who appears in all times and in numerous garb from fearsome, Pharaonic arrogance to seductively liberal, God-less humanism. Man, Shariati repeatedly emphasizes, is to become free only through the destruction of all idols, the cleaning of his 'house' from all that distracts him from his Creator, the sacrifice of all bonds that tie him down to his false hopes and only then through the monotheistic transformation of his being, does he acquire the courage to dislodge the tyranny and emerge from the dark night of falsehood. Only then does the lamb stand fearlessly before the wolf.

> *"Whosoever submits his whole self to God, being a doer of good, his reward is with his Lord; and no fear shall be on them, neither shall they sorrow."* (The Holy Quran, 2:112)

3. Hajj is a blueprint for the Islamic movement and monotheistic revolution. To Shariati, God is Eternal Constancy and man, the eternal movement. The notions of resolve, direction, movement and then a higher resolve, more focused direction and a more forceful movement appear as a convergent spiral all through his writings. Muslims, these pilgrims, these isolated, fortified, discriminating and discriminated crowd of individualities, resolve to cast

off their mask, to put on the *ihram* and become the 'white sown fields of monotheism'. The experiences transforms individuals into the ummah, the cells into the body. The negation of all is essential to accepting the One and then becoming one. There is a definite direction but not a destination. There are many stations of realizations and many pauses of reflection but no end of the journey.

In this sense, hajj is not a pilgrimage to a shrine because the Ka'bah is anti-relativistic. One resolves to journey to the Ka'bah only to discover the direction of life's journey, to establish the meaning of one's existence and to reflect upon the many visages of the enemy. Hajj is the beginning of a migration, from narcissistic self-adoration to search for the Face of the Beloved, from meekness to fearlessness, from ambivalence to resolve, from multitheism to monotheism. Hajj is the journey of the isolated individuality in the direction of a cohesive ummah.

> *The pilgrimage enlightens the minds of the faithful:*
> *It teaches separation from one's home and destroys*
> *attachment to one's native land;*
> *It is an act of devotion in which all feel themselves*
> *to be one.*
> *It binds together the leaves of the book of religion.*[6]

"Hajj is movement from self, towards God, in the company of the people." Hajj is movement; movement is Islam; Islam is the Way and its orientation is monotheism; the Quran is the light; the Prophets are the guides and Imams, the leaders – in all times and everywhere: God is the only Constancy and creation is a perpetual movement.

His creation is not chaos but order and direction, not turbidity but ever-unfolding freshness. It is here that Shariati comes closest to Iqbal's dynamic conception of the universe, Ibn Maskawaih's view of life as an evolutionary movement and al-Biruni's conception of nature as a process of becoming.

Listen to Iqbal: "Islam demands loyalty to God, not to thrones. And since God is the ultimate spiritual basis of all life, loyalty to God virtually amounts to a man's loyalty to his own ideal nature. The ultimate spiritual basis of all life, as conceived by Islam, is eternal and reveals itself in variety and change. A society based on such a conception of Reality must reconcile, in its life, the categories of permanence and change. It must possess eternal principles to regulate its collective life, for the eternal gives us a foothold in the world of perpetual change."[7]

In *Ramuz-i-Bekhudi* , Iqbal devotes a complete section of his *masnavi* to the significances of the Sacred House (*Bayt al-Haram*) and the Ka'bah as the essential center of Muslim collective identity and in his inimitable style, exhorts the sick nation to find its health and vitality by resolving on the hajj.[8]

4. The most brilliant and courageous aspect of *Hajj* is the way it extracts from every act and sequence, every day and duration, every path and place, every personage and event and even the flowing river of pilgrims, a symbol of universal significance. It is here that Shariati has broken away from the tradition of dry, lifeless and overly scholastic philosophers and protagonists of Islam. He puts forward a new language and a fresh methodology of looking at what everybody apologetically calls the 'rituals of pilgrimage'. He also departs from the tradition of romantic and devotional literature that describes the peak emotions of the pilgrims

as they arrive, circumambulate, pray, walk, run, sleep, pray, throw stones like they are supposed to, circumambulate again, pray again, buy gifts and return crowned with the newly acquired title of *haji* or *al-haj*.

Only the burning soul of Shariati could see in hajj the celebration of the monotheistic worldview, travel 'twenty-three years of the Prophet's life in twenty-three days' journeys through Makkah and Madinah. In the resolve for hajj he saw dying before death; in *ihram*, the destruction of 'I' and 'me'; in the individual he saw society and of society, he spoke as a single entity. The emptiness of the Ka'bah freed him from the world of relativities and the 'House of God' appeared to him as the 'Household of God', that is, the people. His dauntless mind connected Abraham's old age, Hajar's patience, the Ka'bah, her skirt, Safa and Marwah, Isma'il's thirst, her search and struggle and the miraculous benevolence of Zamzam in one beautiful narrative of love between the Divine and His Slaves. Every word of this narrative is an exegesis of God's abhorrence for falsehood and his nearness to the truthful, the deprived, the steadfast in faith. 'Arafat became knowledge; Mash'ar, sacred consciousness; and Mina, the station of love. The three *jamarat* became the three visages of Iblis: despotic coercion, exploitative wealth and deception masked by piety and buttressed by the devious intellect. In the eternal confrontation among these three Divine blessings and the evil triumvirate, Shariati saw an entire framework of revolutionary monotheistic movement. His observations on the last two surahs of the Holy Quran (*al-falaq* and *al-nas*) and his moving explanation of the sacrifice of Isma'il (ع), are a benefitting crescendo of this brilliant work – this lasting gift to Muslims and all the deprived of the world.

For those who see Islam being a set of meaningless rituals, for whom *tawhid* is, perhaps, a mere numerical fact, who mechanically and habitually 'perform their ritual prayers', who 'slaughter' a lamb every year because they have to, for whom their 'Islamic practices' are a penance and retribution for realities of their otherwise materialistic lives, Shariati's *Hajj* will be too 'idealistic', perhaps even 'heretic'.

But for all those whose minds are thirsty and hearts forlorn in pursuit of Truth, this will come as a welcome rainshower. It is the most stirring invitation to all the Abrahamic nations of the world to resolve a return to their 'monotheistic home' by understanding their purpose and their station in the scheme of their Creator.

The Language of Shariati

The language of Truth is inherently convincing, discerning and powerful but it acquires the aesthetic dimensions of *balaghat* when spoken by an 'Ali (ع). Reading Shariati, one cannot help but recognize that it is the prose-poetry that gushes forth from a spirit and an intellect that has been nourished with the power of the Quran, the wisdom of the Prophet (ص) and eloquence of 'Ali ibn Abi Talib (ع). Divine in purpose, pure in content, elegant in that it is irreducible and accessible to all because neither are the words exclusive and esoteric nor the construction forcibly philosophical and tedious. His words have the clarity of a brilliant, dustless day; they flow like a torrential river and yet are calm, when needed, like a still lake. Shariati is poetic without being mystical. Ablaze like the desert wind as he speaks of tyranny and martyrdom, he becomes gentle as the morning breeze when in revere of love for the 'Ethiopian-slave' mother of Isma'il (ع).

If one must describe his writing in stylistic terms, it is definitely exhortative, atmospheric and allegorical. Shariati's genius as a writer and a speaker lies in that he can take a subject that has been ignored as banal by the academics and render it so beautiful and eloquent that it becomes the very medium of convincing Truth. He has breathed life into the comatose visages of Islam. His language holds your spirit; it makes you run with it; it pauses and rests in a garden of contemplation; it then takes you into the most unfamiliar pathways of your dormant Muslim mind; and it finally rewards you with insights and revelations that you never expected. Shariati is pure movement. His form, his content and his message are inseparable.

Having savored, in small portions, the Persian edition of *Hajj* , I was awe-struck with the challenge faced by the translator. The *Hajj* in English captures, with impressive honesty and finesse, the emotions and eloquence of Shariati. I cannot imagine him speaking or writing in English any differently than what you will find in the following pages. Through her translation, Laleh Bakhtiar has gifted him to millions of human beings all over the world. Wherever this book travels, so shall his martyred spirit and his insuppressible voice.

"Think not those slain in God's Way as dead, but rather living with their Nourisher, by Him provided." (The Holy Quran 3:169)

Sayyid Gulzar Haidar
1985/86

Notes to the Introduction

1. Muhammad Iqbal was born 60 years before Ali Shariati and died when Shariati was 5 years old. It seems appropriate to quote from Shariati 's description of this great Muslim thinker which appears in one of Shariati's better known works, *Iqbal and Us* (the English translation of which is in preparation at the Abu Dharr Foundation, ed.): "Iqbal is one of the brilliant intellectual and human visages which the fertile culture of Islam has offered to human society.

"Islam, in all of the diverse dimensions of the human spirit, has developed great human beings and the great Family of humanity owes many of its outstanding personalities to Islam and Iqbal is one of them.

"But what distinguishes Iqbal from the line of other great men is the fact that this tall, fruitful tree grew, bore leaves and fruit during a period when the cultural field of Islam had been subjected to pests and had sunk into the sorrowful and deadly silence of autumn. At this very moment, suddenly, the up-rooting flood and storm of western colonialism made its onslaught and this autumn-stricken, pest-infected field was flooded while its unfortunate peasants were fast asleep. The superintendants were only plunderers and its farmers were composed of only herds of incursive wolves, foxes and jackals. In the words of Hafez: 'After this poison that blew over the garden, it is surprising how flowers remained alive and nasturtiums could retain their scent.'

"In such a season and from such a ruined and arid field, there suddenly emerged a free standing ceadar tree that caught the eyes of friend and foe.

"To the feeble bushes, to the yellow and trembling willows, to the tender and ripe twigs, as well as to the thousands of seeds with hundreds of blossoming and blossomed desires, their heads rising out of the earth and turning their faces towards the heavens, who remained buried under the steps of the enemy and who out of fear of this bad season and disastrous flood, submitted to the fate of 'secretly dying and silently rotting', he proclaimed:

" 'Under this parched and pest-infested field, the boundless sea of the Islamic spirit continues to surge and within this soil there is hidden the cultural source , rich with life and the essence of growth, movement and fertility. If you immerse your dry and short roots which now remain as this uncovered upon the earth, endangered by the polluted air and poisonous winds of the West, into the depths of the fertile soil of your own culture and obtain morale and energy from the sea of life and faith of Islam, then you will be able to grow like patient and brave trees which grow strong and firm in the desert, turn their heads towards the fire of the sun in spite of this poison which comes to your autumn-immersed land of Islam from the plundering and culture-robbing West. Grow and stand on your own two feet and under the sun and rain of your heavens, once again make a heaven out of the life, greenness and cultivation of this destroyed, anguished, scorched desert.'

"Yea. Was it not this very wonderous spirit which blew upon the burned sands of the peninsula and in that silent wilderness, in which even plants were afraid to grow, in a period of ten years, nurtured men from a few hollow skeleton, nameless and signless slaves , bedouins and savages, who then blew a new spirit into the history of human civilization and caused a new race of human beings to appear upon the earth? Was it not this very spirit which, in a period of less than a quarter of a century, not only freed several abased, poverty-stricken tribes from the colonialist chains of the two great military, political and civil empires of Rome and Iran but it built them into mujahids who freed the great masses of the East and the West from the domination of despotic rulers, Caesars, Khosroes, priests, high priests and landlords. Iqbal, not only with his words, but with his very 'being' as well, taught such a lesson to the colonialized Muslims of the world of today.

"He showed that Islam, in spite of ignorance and inner stagnation, as well as being captive in the jungles of foreign military entanglements, still has the ability to nurture great geniuses into becoming beautiful, deep and powerful spirits and its culture can still bring back into its own embrace its children from the influence of the western formed culture and civilization and develop an Iqbal from an Indian youth who had found his way from a sick, colonialized country to a powerful, colonizer and civilized Europe...

"Iqbal was a man of religion and a man of this world; a man of faith and knowledge, intellect and emotions, philosophy and literature, gnosis and politics, God and the people, who worshipped and undertook jihad, who had ideology and culture, a man of yesterday and today, 'a devotee during the night and a lion during the day': he was a Muslim." (*Iqbal and Us*, pp. 5-7). [Editor's Footnote]

2. Shahid Ustad Murtada Mutahhari was and, through his extensive expressions, continues to be one of the leading ideologists of the Islamic Revolution. He was martyred just a few months after the Revolution in 1980 by a member of the Furqan group. This group claimed to attach itself to Shariati's thoughts but in practice, distorted aspects of Shariati which suited their own purposes. This group, which can clearly be termed 'leftist khawarij', took the criticism which Shariati directed at pseudo-clergymen and the comments that he made calling for a reform among religious scholars and 'ulama to mean their total elimination. They began to carry out their treachery by martyring one of the dearest and clearest of the Revolution's teachers.

How strange that neither Ali Shariati nor Ustad Mutahhari were able to be present in the reconstruction after the Revolution that they had given their lives for. One was martyred two years before the victory of the Revolution by SAVAK and the other, 3 months after the victory of the Revolution by SAVAK's methods. How convenient it was for the enemies of the Revolution that Ustad Mutahhari was physically eliminated from the scene by a person who claimed that his bullet came from Shariati's thoughts!

But the lesson that the forces who work behind such treachery never seem to learn is that truth persists. These two great men were Muslim mujahids who stood in the same front. Although Ustad Mutahhari made some very strong criticism of some of Shariati's lectures, in particular, his very early ones, errors which Shariati himself had manly admitted to in his last will and testament when he asked that his brothers in faith correct any error he may have inadvertently made because he had been obliged by the circumstances of time and the pressure of the security forces to state some things in great haste, yet Ustad Mutahhari was to write the following letter to Shariati just a few years before Shariati's martyrdom in 1977, a letter which clearly shows the love and respect which existed between these two social activists.

He wrote to Dr. Shariati asking him to contribute to a book which the Husayniyah Irshad was preparing for the occasion of the passing of 14 centuries from the time that the Holy Prophet received the *ba'that.* The book is called: *Muhammad (ص), Khatam Payambaran.:*

My dear brother scholar, Dr. Ali Shariati,

Your heart bears witness to the extent of my respect for you and what hope I hold for your future in enlightening the young generation to the truths of Islam. May God increase examples like you. I was anticipating a visit by you to Tehran before the month of Mehr (September 22-October 21) which would have gladdened the hearts of your sincere friends. Unfortunately your friends were not so rewarded. At any rate, we pray to God Almighty for your good health, felicity and further success.

Some time ago your honorable father and our dear master, Mr. Shariati, at my request, gave you a letter about the fact that upon the occasion of the end of 14 centuries after the *ba'that* of the Holy Prophet (ص), a book is to be compiled with a great deal of care which will be useful in introducing the personality of the Holy Prophet. Our friends have divided it into roughly 20 topics, the list of which will be sent to you.

Three subjects relate to the history of the life of the Holy Prophet from birth to the *ba'that*, from the *ba'that* to the migration and from the migration to death, that is, it has been divided into three parts. Dr. Sayyid Ja'far Shahidi has agreed to write the first two, and , of course, he measures up to the task and the third part, which is more important than the first two, we request that you write. Perhaps the major and basic part of this book will be these three parts considering the mujahid and worthy authors. Clearly the third part will be longer. Although it has been agreed that the length of each part should not exceed 30-40 pages but it is my opinion that the part which you are to write can be as long as 50 pages.

We anticipate that with your intuition, innovation and sense of selection, you will, in a succinct and, at the same time, clear way, present all of the illuminating parts of that part of the life of the Holy Prophet and , in particular, that, noting your clear perceptions, you will open up those parts which others have not attended to such as the causes which resulted in the migration and the benefits that Islam gained by the Holy Prophet creating a center outside Makkah and also the method of treatment of Islam and the Holy Prophet of peoples of other religious faiths, the method of rule and system of administering to Muslims from the political, social, etc. points of view. Social training of Muslims, an analysis of the letters and messages of the Holy Prophet to the world's leaders of that day, etc. which you yourself know better.

I may possibly come to Mashhad in another two weeks and after spending one night there, I will journey to Fariman. I hope I will have the joy of seeing you. Please give my salams to all our friends.

—Murtada Mutahhari

(Persian printed in Soroush Magazine, vol. 3, no. 102, 1360 /1981.) [Editor's Footnote]

3. A husayniyah is a traditional religious center where the people gather to see passion plays, in particular, those related to the third Shi'ite Imam, Imam Husayn, peace be upon him, and his

martyrdom at Karbala. The Husayniyah-i-Irshad mentioned here is located in Tehran. It is a center built in the late 60's and has extended the meaning to include a center for lectures about Islam. Ali Shariati was one of the first people to lecture there and drew crowds in the thousands. People gathered in the streets and surrounding areas to hear him. But as the tyrant Shah began to fear his effect, the secret police closed down the center for several years. It was reopened after the Revolution. [Editor's Footnote]

4. From the *Javid Namah* of Muhammad Iqbal. Translated by Shaikh Mahmud Ahmad.

گفت رومیؒ ذرّۂ گردوں نوردا   در دلِ او یک جہانِ سوز و دردا
چشم جز بر خویشتن نکشادۂ   دل بکس ناداده آزادۂ
تند سیر اندر فراخائے وجود
من ز شوخی گویم او را زندہ رودؒ

5. From *Asrar-i-Khudi* of Muhammad Iqbal. Translated by R.A. Nicholson.

عاشقی؟ محکم شو از تقلیدِ یارؐ   تا کمندِ تو شود یزداں شکار
اندکے اندر حراے دل نشیں   ترکِ خود کن سوے حق ہجرت گزیں
محکم از حق شو سوے خود گام زن   لات و عزاے ہوس را سر شکن
لشکرے پیدا کن از سلطانِ عشق (۲) جلوہ گر شو بر سرِ فارانِ عشق
تا خداے کعبہ بنوازد ترا
شرحِ اِنّی جاعلٌ سازد ترا

6. *ibid.*

مومناں را فطرت افروز است حج   ہجرت آموز و وطن سوز است حج
طاعتے سرمایۂ جمعیتے   ربطِ اوراقِ کتابِ ملتے

7. *Reconstruction of Religious Thought in Islam*, p. 47. Shaikh Muhammad Ashraf, publishers, Lahore, 1960.

8. See Appendix Four.

In the Name of God
the Merciful, the Compassionate

A WORD TO THE READER

In the name of a person knowledgeable about religion, and, in particular, since my speciality is 'History of Religions', I have arrived at the following conclusion in the study of history's religious missions and the course of historic change of a religion, according to the interpretation of Francis Bacon, not with the tearful eyes of religious sensitivities or group prejudice, but with the dry eyes of science, in comparing 'that which has been' to 'what it has become' and then, comparing these difference – the difference between the 'truth' and 'reality' of religions – with one another.[1]

If we evaluate any religion from the point of view of the mission it bears for the salvation of humanity, I know of no mission more progressive in social growth, self-awareness, movement, responsibility, seeking of human ideals, social insight, the spirit of longing for justice, seeking dignity, and, finally, tending towards reality, considering nature, being compatible with material power and scientific progress, development, civilization, the spirit of intellectual challenges and being oriented towards the people – and, at the same time, more conscious and more powerful than the school of Abrahamic monotheism (as manifested) in the prophetic mission of Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, that is, Islam.

At the same time, I know of no mission which has progressed to the extent Islam has towards degeneration; a comparison of what it was with what it has become reflects the inconsistency.

If you were to compare the Islam of today with other degenerate or degenerated religions of the world, you might consider my judgment to be incorrect, but such a comparison is not right. The degree of the deviation of a truth should be measured with the fate of that truth itself and evaluated in relation to its initial way and the beginning point of its movement.

If we, with this very method, turn ourselves to the task of studying Islamic sects and evaluating and weighing them, then we will discover the fate of Shi'ism in Islam to be as Islam in relation to other religions.

It is amazing!

In comparing the 'truth' with the 'reality' of other religions, the word 'difference' can be employed, whereas in comparing the nature of Islam and Shi'ism with the historical destiny of Islam and Shi'ism, such a word does not do justice. Instead of that, the word 'contradiction' or 'inconsistency' is more explicit.[2]

And more amazing!

It is as if a power, having at its disposal all of the hidden, and, often, manifest, material and spiritual possibilities, has assigned a group of the most powerful and elite philosophers of history, sociologists, anthropologists, philosophers, specialists in the human sciences, theologians, social psychologists, politicians, orientalists, Islamologists, Quranologists, jurisprudents, specialists in gnosis and Islamic literature; those familiar with social mores, with the psychological and intellectual characteristics and the weak, sensitive and emotional aspects of Middle Eastern people; those familiar with the special tendencies of social and class behavior, aware of the role of celebrities, symbols, appearances and powers among these masses and systems, to undertake a scientific study of the culture and the people and to thereby gain a profound understanding of Islam, in the most precise meaning possible of the word, then, reverse Islam because it is clear that we are not referring to the degeneration and natural changes of a religion, but what has occurred to Islam is a reversal. It is so precise that it cannot have been simply an accident or something which has been born from natural, unconscious elements in history or something resulting from a confrontation with foreign cultures or influenced by tribal, class and particular traditional perceptions of nations who joined Islam or any other circumstances, conditions and historic, social or cultural causes which normally affect an intellectual school of thought or a religious faith, change and divert it, whereas it appears that this reversal in Islam has very consciously, maturely and completely occurred so that the most progressive dimensions of its ideology or practice have been changed into the most degenerated, anti-social elements.

It is interesting that it is here, also, that Shi'ism has been particularized by such a fate. It is obvious that two similar natures must have similar destinies. According to a more correct interpretation, just as Shi'ism is the most progressive manifestation of Islam's mission, it is quite natural, in such a reversal, that it be turned into the most degenerate, present manifestation [circa 1971].

As far as I understand, the most progressive dimensions of Islamic ideology or practice, which guarantee consciousness, liberty, movement and the glory of its believers and, more important than any of these, create social power and responsibility are:

Monotheism (*tawhid*), Jihad and Hajj

Monotheism: We see that the teaching of monotheism ends in the schools of the traditional centers of learning and, if, after this, any mention is made of it, it is discussed only in the groups of Divine sages and spiritual gnostics and that, in the form of words, philosophical and subjective conversations removed from life and alien to the people; the emphasis is more upon proving the existence of God and not monotheism. In practical terms, "Monotheism means nothing. It is a subject which has been solved," and solved at the command of the enemy, or, at least, to his benefit!

Jihad: A forgotten word which has been left to history; commanding to good or virtue and preventing evil or vice, *amr b'il ma'ruf wa nahy an al-munkar*, which is the philosophy of jihad, has become a bludgeon for excommunication, and not over the head of the enemy, at that, but over the head of a friend!

Hajj: The most indecent and illogical action which is repeated every year among Muslims!

And the most progressive dimensions of ideology or practice particular to Shi'ism which inspire the most sublime type of human leadership, a liberation-seeking spirit and revolutionary responsibility in 'Ali-like Muslims:

Imamate, 'Ashura and Anticipation

We see that the first (imamate or leadership) has become a means of recourse to omit one's duty; the second ('Ashura, the day of the martyrdom of Imam Husayn) has become the symbol of a school of 'bereavement'! and the third, (anticipation, awaiting the Mahdi) has become a philosophy of submission, justifying oppression, the tyranny of corruption and the condemnation of any steps for reform and any arisings for justice before they even occur.

And, they achieved all of these with a single policy: A policy which took the 'Book of Supplications' from the cemetery to the city and the Holy Quran, from life and the city, to the cemetery where it was offered to the spirits of the dead; taking the Holy Quran from their hands, it placed books on the Science of Principles at the disposal of the students of Islamic Science in the traditional centers of religious learning, put the Holy Quran on the shelf of their room. It is obvious that when the Quran not only deserts the life of the Muslim people but Islam, as well! everything becomes possible in its absence, and we see that everything has been done!

An intellectual feels responsible to his people, a Muslim to his faith. Thus, a Muslim intellectual, having a double responsibility, suffers both from the metamorphosis of the sublime values of his faith as well as from the degeneration of his people. His greatest anguish is to observe that his society – with the Christ-like spirit that it has which can give life to the dead and sight to the blind – is now so dying and becoming blind! What does he sense and what responsibility does he have to Islam, Shi'ism, Muslim society and Shi'ites? And, particularly, to the most developed, threefold dimensions [mentioned above] of Islam and Shi'ism?

Can he remain silent? Is the treatment for the pain and the way of salvation of the people to take recourse in western ideology? Can he negate, deny and disavow his responsibility and sit in fruitless anticipation for further centuries by using the excuse that it is religious scholars who are responsible for the destiny of Islam and Shi'ism and only express his existence with intellectual-like grumblings? If Islam, particularly according to a Shi'ite understanding of it, is a mission and not a special subject in philosophy or science, then it is only people who are directly addressed and it is a conscious clear-thinker who is directly responsible for it.

And you - my sympathetic intellectual, fellow Muslim: whether you consider yourself responsible to the people or to God, in practice, our work is the same, our responsibility, the same.

The course that our enemy has chosen for our humiliation is the best guide for us to choose as the way to our glory:

Returning from the same way that he has led us. Bringing back the Quran from the cemetery to the city and its recitation, from now on, for the living! Bringing down the Quran from the shelf and opening it for our lessons.

They were not able to destroy the Quran so they closed it, instead, and made 'the Book', a 'holy object'. We should once again turn it into 'the Book' and read it, for the word *quran* means just this.

Will the day come when we see the Quran has been accepted as a textbook in the Islamic programs of our traditional centers of religious training?

Will the day come when we see that the Quran must also be studied by students of religious jurisprudence as a religious textbook for achieving the level of *ijtihad*, that is, the level achieved after putting forth great endeavors in striving to understand religious issues?

If we bring back the Quran to our life and religion, then it will bring back monotheism to us as a world view; monotheism, hajj, jihad, imamate, martyrdom and anticipation will again find their life-spirit and we, also, our own spirit and life. And now, the hajjj, a hajj in monotheism's world view. And a hajj which is monotheism's world view.

All the words I have to say about the hajj, the extracts of my deliberations and experiences during the three hajj's and one journey have been compiled in three volumes.

Twenty-three Years in Twenty-three Days

Volume One: Twenty-three Years in Twenty-three Days

It occurred to me that every Iranian spends an average of twenty-three days in the peninsula for the hajj. For many years I have only thought about the Prophet and his life. The Prophet is the least known among us of all of our religious personalities.[3] If, occasionally his life comes up, it is used to develop problems among the sects and theological, historical and ethical controversies between the Shi'ites and the Sunnis. As a result, only a few particular and limited examples of his instructive and amazing biography are repeated and even these few items mentioned are not based on research and independent investigation, but rather, upon fixed, pre-judgments and one-sided, pre-determined, imitative and, most often, prejudicial positionings.

Thus, for many years I have continuously been drowned in the astonishing personality, greatness of spirit and the allurements of the life of the Prophet. I have compiled the twenty-three years of the life of his mission – year by year in Makkah and month by month in Madinah; I have explored that which I have read about the life of this great ummi messenger of history in the geography of the land of the Prophet during my four consecutive journeys there. I have drawn the 'destiny of the Prophet' upon 'the land of the Prophet'.

I have drawn a map of the Arabian peninsula as it was during the age of the Prophet. I have indicated all of the tribes of that era on the present geographical map of the peninsula. I have also drawn the map of Makkah and Madinah during the age of the Prophet; I have specified the signs or traces of him and those of his family wherever they are to be found, friends and/or enemies who had dealings with him in Makkah, Madinah, Ta'if and the suburbs of Makkah, Ta'if and Madinah. I have pursued all of the courses of his journeys, battlefields and all traces of his life – wherever he had lived or passed through. At any rate, I have located every place which had a trace of him in towns, mountains and deserts. I have precisely specified the battlefields of Badr, Uhud, Khandaq, Bani Qarizah, Khaybar, Fath, Hunayn and Ta'if. I have prepared a perfect sketch of the Bani Hashim's area in Makkah and Madinah, the Prophet's mosque, and the homes of each and everyone of his wives, the home of Fatimah, peace be upon her, in Madinah, the home of Khadijah, Abu Talib, the birth place of Fatimah, peace be upon her, and the exact addresses of the eminent religious leaders and Companions and also the area of his great enemies in Makkah so that one can find them in the so changed environmental situation of the Makkah, Madinah and Ta'if of today (1971), so that one, then, can precisely visualize the town's environment and the social and family life of the Prophet; one can see living history, feel one's self to be part of the age, place and under the same conditions and states which have a close link with our soul.

Thus, it is possible for you, the pilgrim, to be with the Prophet everywhere during these twenty-three days. Stay for thirteen days in Makkah – marking his thirteen years of stay in Makkah – and take a journey to Ta'if, following his way, a journey to 'invite' and a journey to 'fight'. Then, alongside the Emigrants, migrate from Makkah to Madinah, along the way, Rabadhah and Badr. Enter Quba. Then, in Madinah, search every one of its streets and alleys, every one of the nodes which has a sign of him, his family and his Companions. Then, make a trip to Khaybar, this silent and virgin valley which has remained as it was fourteen centuries ago. See the castles of the Jews over the peaks of the surrounding mountains in the profound, mysterious silence of the damp, palm groves. Recognize every one of these. Listen to the 'thunder-like cry of 'Ali' which still resonates in this memory-filled silence. See his signs with your own eyes: see the Marhab citadel upon the high peak. View other abandoned citadels, deserted houses and the silent, palm groves of Khaybar...

The detailed plans of the lines of battle scenes have been drawn where adventures were set down in the destinies of the lands of Badr, Uhud, Khaybar, Hunayn and Makkah.

Live with the Prophet for ten days in Madinah. Go everywhere he went and also find 'Ali and each and every Companion, even the homes of the Companions. See the old Madinah everywhere in the present Madinah. In this way, place yourself in the context of an ardent, loving, history of Islam, full of movement and jihad. Find yourself amidst the Emigrants and the Helpers of the Prophet during those twenty-three years of the blessed history of human beings. See the history of Islam and the customs of the Prophet in this way, alongside the hajj. Learn of the complete, precise, living and determining course of Islam simultaneously with the hajj, in the cradle of Islam, in the dearest of lands and moments, in the most prepared of states and the freest time of life – which is normally futily spent in useless expectations and more useless conversations, shopping and watching and discussing shopping.[4]

The Appointment with Abraham

Volume Two: The Place of the Covenant with Abraham

Volume two is concerned with the meeting one has with Abraham. The discussion centers around Adam, Abraham, monotheism, the philosophy of history, the mission of Islam for humanity and the intellectual, historic, social, ethical or sociological role of monotheism, multitheism (*shirk*) and the basic scheme and philosophy of the hajj.

Rituals

Volume Three: Hajj: Reflections on its Rituals

Volume three [the present volume] concerns rituals (*manasik*). *Manasik* is the plural of *nusuk*. What meanings appear from the root *nusk*? Worship, devotedness, mortification and humility before God; whatever brings human beings closer to Him, everything one does for Him – washing and cleaning one's clothes, arriving at a destination, traversing the right path, taking a way of beauty and continuing to take it – every right which belongs to God, whatever is presented to God, i.e. blood and retribution.

The *nasik* human being: a human being of pious devotion. A *nasik* land: a green and fresh land, upon which rain has recently fallen; *mansik:* a familiar and affectionate land, a region with which the heart is intimate and linked and the right path which God has placed before every ummah to walk upon in search of salvation and the truth! And *manasik,* rituals are neither solely contained in the treatises of religious jurisprudence on ceremonies and acts of the hajj, nor are they only contained in an intellectual treatise on the philosophy of these ceremonies and an interpretation and analysis of these acts; rather, the special name of these ceremonies and acts in the hajj is 'rituals'; this is the name that Islam itself gives to them; it shows my interpretation of hajj – for I say the hajj is a combination of 'movements', 'orderly movements' connected to 'time' and in 'union' – which accords with this nomenclature.

And this writing is an interpretation and analysis of this humble servant of God about these ceremonies and precepts. No Muslim has a duty to perform the ceremonies of the hajj according to this because this book is not a treatise of jurisprudence; it is a contemplative treatise. This is why I have only tried to interpret the 'rituals of the hajj'. And that, not as a religious scholar or an Islamic religious authority whose dictates are followed, but rather as 'a Muslim pilgrim', who, upon the return from the hajj, has the right to speak about the hajj, about what was found there and speaks. And others, also, have the right to listen to one's words, and they do listen. And this is not just a right; perhaps, as opposed to the custom of people going to visit a traveler who has just returned from a trip, this custom that at the time of the return from the hajj, the haj invites family, friends and neighbors to visit him or her is so that every year, in this way, the issues of the hajj may be made relevant and become the subject of discussion; so that what one brings to one's own land to give as a gift is an expression of what was understood in the place of the covenant with God and His people.

This is one of the great lessons of the hajj: every year a minority, who were able, actually go, and a majority, who were unable to go, participate in the hajj in theory. If, to the same extent that those who are responsible to attend to food, hygiene, souvenirs and ugly, aristocratic extravagances and anti-hajj luxuries would give care to training the million or so Muslims who undertake the hajj from the world over, from the remotest villages and the most primitive tribes and even if one thousandth of the fanaticism and stress on the analysis and compulsions are employed in the proper performance of its actions to express an understanding, the sense and the content of the hajj, the hajj would become a means of yearly instruction, a series of lessons whereby hundreds of thousands of free and enthusiastic representatives would be able, in one month, to become familiar with practical and theoretical Islamology, with the spirit of the hajj, with the mission of Islam, with the school of thought and action of monotheism and the fate of Muslim peoples and then, with hand and heart full, return to their countries, their cities and environs of their work and life and their faith and then, teach one's own people that which has been learned. In this way, the hajj will be like the roaring spring of Zamzam from which, each year, the Muslim ummah can quench its thirst by drinking of its thought and faith; a pilgrim who will not just be one who 'kissed a stone' in allegiance but a bearer of light to people, a light which can illuminate one's dark environment until the end of one's life. In this way, every person, at the level of one's understanding can, at least, when seated, familiarize the people around oneself, four hundred friends, family and fellow colleagues who come to visit, with the school of the hajj instead of recollections of repeated and non-sensical incidents and the vomitings of the journey; every year, all of the Muslims of the world would be trained through one million five hundred thousand teachers of the hajj, and this Islamic tradition, whereby a Muslim must himself (or herself) invite people to visit, occurs twice:

Once, hajj and the other: death!

To think about the hajj, once a year, at a fixed time.

And to think about death!

Death which has no time, death does not inform its victim.

But the victim of death informs you.

Beware!

Time! Time!

The hajj is exceptional among all of the other religious or non-religious precepts and acts.

The ritual prayer is the attraction of the spirit towards the spiritual center of the world, the great Diety and Beloved of Being, and, as Victor Hugo has said, "Who placed 'an infinitely tiny' before 'an infinitely great'."

This is a 'permanent, distinct concept' , of course, in varying degrees.

Jihad is an ideological war.

And, of course, the degree of understanding of this depends upon the depth of thought of the mujahid; and this holds true for fasting and the poor-rate...

But the hajj?

Who can define it in one distinct term or phrase?

What is the hajj?

The answer to this question is perhaps as varied as the number of every pilgrim who thinks. The hajj – in whatever way it be understood – is a movement from self towards God, step by step with the people.

The hajj is an implicit rule, like implicit verses of the Holy Quran. Verses of the Quran are of two kinds: explicit and implicit.

Explicit verses are mono-dimensioned, words having a fixed, clear meaning and implicit verses are multi-dimensioned, words that lead the mind to various ways and different means are simultaneously understood.

And the richest and most fundamental meanings are hidden in the content of the implicit ones; it is these verses, in every age, with every discovery, that open a door to its endless inwardnessess and with changes and transformations of thoughts and feelings, these complicated, intricate weaves, full of the mystery of expression, blossom still further and become more clear.

And it is in the heart of the mysterious oyster of these implicit verses where one must hunt and search for the diverse thoughts of future centuries which have remained concealed from the weak-sighted and the slip-shod thoughts of today and yesterday.

It is this hundred-fold, colorful kaledascope of implicit verses which has made the 'words of the Quran', a simple message whereby a bedouin nomad can easily understand and discover. that he is being addressed and, at the same time, a learned philosopher is amazed by its artistic miracle, spiritual richness and the depths of its intellectual complexities; never does his searching mind nor his truth-seeking heart reach the end of it. It is these implicit verses which have guaranteed the perpetuity, effectiveness, learning and refreshing quality of this Book over the course of time – which erodes, ages, kills and gives birth to everything – upon the earth – which is the place of being, annihilation, death and life.

Precepts are also like verses, in my mind, divided into explicit and implicit; jihad is an explicit precept and the hajj is an implicit one!

And what has really caused difficulty in understanding these implicit precepts is that the language selected for their expression is a coded, and, in today's terms, symbolic one.

And that which has added to its difficulty is that this symbolic language is not expressed through words but through movement, action. And a soundless movement.

An implicit precept which has been expressed in a symbolic movement!

And in the hajj, it is not just language which has made it implicit, but the content, as well!

Why so?

Because the hajj is not so simple as to pour forth everything which exists in its heart to the sight of one generation in one era or open its inwardness to the needs of one understanding and the capacity of one feeling, and, in this way, become a repeated tradition, a solidified ceremony, a command which must be obeyed: absurd, hollow, spiritless, speechless, roleless, out-dated, terminated and historic for other ages and for other generations.

Furthermore, the hajj does not set forth an ideology, a command or a value; the hajj is all of Islam. Islam in words is the Quran; in human beings, it is the Imam; and in movement or action, the hajj.

It seems as if everything which God wished to say to a humanity was spilled, all at once, into the hajj: it includes the philosophy of existence, a world view of the philosophy of the creation of the human being and the course of history, in particular, the transformative phases of humanity — from the time of the creation of mankind upon the earth, till the final peak of its perfection; it embodies what humanity must learn and the stages it must pass through in its servitude, in its ascent to the Summit and finally, the plan of creation for mankind's genesis, the formation of the ummah, model of humanity, the transformation towards perfection of the individual and the principles of eternal change, fixed order, precise co-ordination with time and social authenticity; in general: a consciously selected group movement towards Eternal Primordiality and Infinite Perfection:

'God'.

And the issue of guidance, ethical values, imamate, ummah, maktab (school of thought and action), historic connection, human society, cultural partnership, political solidarity, class unity, racial unity, ideological unity, way, movement, direction, leadership, goal, responsibility, ideology, self-sacrifice, fear of God, consciousness, self-awareness, mobilization, arms, preparation, weapons, strategy, jihad, martyrdom, love, blood, victory, freedom...

Everything ranging from the world view of monotheism to the philosophy of existence to the struggle against war, discrimination and hunger!

Both God and bread.
Both servitude and salvation.
Both self-development
And dissolution of the individual in the ummah.
Sacrifice self to the people
But not for the sake of the self
Not for the sake of the people
But for God!

*

What have I understood from the hajj?

The answer to this question must first be given, that is: Essentially what can be understood from the hajj?

The hajj, in a general view, is the existential course of a human being towards God; it is a symbolic drama of the philosophy of creation of the children of Adam; it is the objective embodiment of that which is relevant in this philosophy and, in a single word, the hajj is similar to creation and, at the same time, similar to history, and, at the same time, similar to monotheism. It is at one and the same time similar to maktab, similar to the ummah (ideological society, model society which Islam wishes to establish among human beings) and, finally, the hajj is a symbolic drama of the creation of the human being and, also, of the maktab of Islam in which God is the Director, the language of the play is movement and the principal characters are: Adam, Abraham, Hajar and Iblis; scenes take place in the sacred area: the Masjid al-Haram, Mas'a, 'Arafat, Mash'ar and Mina and symbols: the Ka'bah, Safa and Marwah, day and night, sunset and sunrise, idol and sacrifice; dress and ornaments: the *ihram*, *halq* and *taqsir*.

And the actors?

— This is most amazing —

Only one person. You. Whosoever you are, whether man or woman, whether old or young, whether black or white, because you have participated in this scene, you have the main role. In the character of Adam as well as Abraham as well as Hajar and in the contradiction — 'Allah/Iblis'! for here no distinction is made and even one's sex is not relevant; there is only one hero and that is the human being! It is theater in which one person plays all the roles, is the hero of the story and, at the same time, the stage is open; every year, all of the Abrahamic human beings upon the earth are invited to participate in this marvelous play! Whosoever can arrive in season, from whatever part of the world, enters the scene and undertakes the main role, becomes the hero of the scene, plays all roles oneself.

There is no dispersion here, no distinction here, no classification. All are one and that one, All. Islam looks at human beings in this way!

"Whoso slays a soul not to retaliate for a soul slain, nor for corruption done in the land, shall be as if he had slain mankind altogether; and whoso gives life to a soul, shall be as if he had given life to mankind altogether." (5:32) Is it not that a human is a human being? Observe the value of a human being in this religion, yet its enemy accuses it of abasing the human being! and this is a lie! The friend makes it into an instrument to abase the human being with it! and this is the truth! In our history – overflowing with oppression and suppression – is anything more oppressed than Islam? And in Islam, than the hajj? As 'Ali, the son of the Ka'bah so beautifully says, "The *poustin* of Islam is worn in reverse," and the same thing may be said of the hajj. Not the tradition of human beings, but the tradition of sheep!

What have I understood from the hajj? It is so extensive that its meaning is endless, 'an infinitely great' and what can an individual, this 'infinitely tiny' understand from that? What can be seen there? How?

My dear reader, this is the extent of my claim:

If you want to know how to practice the hajj, read the treatises of the jurisprudents on the rituals. If you want to understand the meaning of the hajj, understand Islam and, within it, recognize the human being. And if you only want to know how I have understood the hajj, read this book. Perhaps reading it will stimulate you to understand the hajj, or, at least, in thinking a little about it.

A little.

Just this; not more.

PART ONE
THE LESSER HAJJ
Introduction

Hajj: resolve, intention; it means movement and includes the direction of the movement, as well. Everything will begin by digging 'you' out from the 'self', from your life and from all your attachments. Are you not a resident in your city? Residency, repose. The hajj negates repose, life, something the goal of which is itself; that is, death; a kind of death which breathes; a living dead; a corpse-like living, a slime-like being.

Hajj: flow!

Life is a rotating movement, a useless rotation, repetitious and futile comings and goings. The major task? Growing old. The real consequence? Deterioration. A monotonous and foolish fluctuation. A torture. Day, the preliminary of night. Night, the preliminary of day. Being occupied with cool and repetitive games of these two black and white mice that gnaw on the thread of life, shortening it until death.

Life? Watching. A watching of fruitless and senseless mornings and evenings; a flat and inconsequential game; when you do not have, all is anguish, endeavor and anticipation; when you find it and attain it, nothing, absurd, a futile philosophy, nihilism!

And the hajj, your rebellion against this foolish determinism, this damned destiny; turning away from vacillation, doubt, the rotation of life, production for consumption; consumption for production.

Hajj unravels the skein of your being in which you have lost the thread of self; this closed circuit will open with a revolutionary intention; will become a horizon; will move on a straight course – migration towards eternity, towards another, towards 'Him'.

A migration from the house of 'self' to the House of God! To the house of the people! And you, whoever you may be...who are you? You have been a human being. You have been 'a child of Adam'; but history, life and the anti-human social system has metamorphosized you; has alienated you from your 'self', from your primordial nature; has made you a stranger. You were a human being in the world of particles. You were God's vice-gerent, a conversant with God, the special trustee of God , the Divine-like in nature, the Family of God; the Spirit of God had blown upon you. You were God's special pupil. God taught you all the Names;[1] taught you with the 'pen'; God created you in His image.[2] When God created you, He praised His power of creation. When He created you, He placed you, erect; He cast down all of His angels, His angels near and far, before your feet. He brought everything into submission to you. He left the earth, heaven and everything in it to your mighty hands. He came to you and placed His special trust upon your shoulders. He made a covenant with you and brought you to earth. He Himself is within your primordial nature. He became one within your 'house',[3] then remained in anticipation to see what you would do.[4]

And you? You took the path of history, setting off down the road; the knapsack of God's trust upon your shoulder; the covenant of God in your hand; the Names God taught you in your heart; the Spirit of God within your 'being-ness'. And...time is your total capital and you, your work? Eating from your capital! Your life's profession? Being a loser; not a loser of profits but of capital: Loss? And *"By the time, surely the human being is in the way of loss."* (103:1-2) Yet it is called 'living'. And you, what have you done to this point? You have lived.

"What do you have in hand?"

"The number of years I have lost."

And what have you become? O in the image of God! O responsible for His trust! O who the angels prostrated before! O vice-gerent of Allah upon the earth! In the world!

You have become money; have become lust; have become pot-bellied; have become a lie; a beast, an animal; become hollow, absurd, empty! Or, no, full of muck and nothing else! For in the beginning you were a dead corpse; mucky, putrid clay. And God breathed His Spirit in this you. Where is that Spirit? That Divine Spirit, that Divine Soul? O muck-eating raven, emerge from this stilled marsh of self, from this swamp of your existence. Throw yourself suddenly upon the shore. O putrid corpse! O corpse of slime! Desert this town, garden, village – mingled with disgrace – head for the peninsula's desert, a sandy, blazen and dry desert under a heaven which rains down revelation. Face towards God. O dry, yellow, hollow cone! Moan from nostalgia, from exile and from alienation. O instrument of joy and happiness of strangers, enemies. O whose tunes are from the lips of others, seek out your own reed bed!

The Season (*mu'sim*)

Now the time has ripened. It is the moment of meeting. It is the month of Dhihajjah, the month of hajj, the month of reverence. Swords have been quieted. The neigh of the battle horses and the roar of the warriors and the brazen have grown silent in the desert. Fighting, avenging and fearing have given way to the earth for peace, worship and security. The masses have an appointment to meet with God. One should go in season. One must go with people to meet with God. Do you not hear the words to Abraham upon the earth, *"And proclaim the hajj unto the people. They will come to you on foot and on lean camel, coming from every remote way."* (22:27)[5]

And you, O slime! Seek the Spirit of God. Return and ask for it from Him. Resolve to seek out His House from your house. He awaits you in His House. He calls loudly to you. Respond affirmatively to His invitation. Say, "Here I am," (*labbayk*) And you, O who are nothing, who are only a 'becoming' towards Him and that is all.[6]

It is the season. Release yourself from this filthy, disgraceful and humble, narrow life – this world; save yourself from your suffocating and closed individuality – the ego; resolve on Him with the sign of the eternal migration of the human being – the perpetual becoming of the human being towards God. Make the hajj!

Pay your debts; wash away stains; remove hatred; make up with those you have quarreled with; pay accounts; seek the forgiveness of others. Clean the environment of your life, your links, wealth and savings; that is, you die here; it appears that you go, a going without a return; it is an allusion to the moment of the last farewell; a sign of the destiny of the human being; a drama of disconnecting everything to join eternity. And thus: make your last will and testament which means death. An exercise in preparation of death; a death which will forcibly select you one day; now you make the hajj. Resolve on eternity, an appointment with God, the Day of Reckoning, where action is no longer possible, the time where your ears, your eyes, and your heart are put on trial, which will, one by one, be asked, *"The hearing, the sight, the heart – all of these shall be questioned!"* (17:36) You, body, your body, you are responsible; all are responsible; and you, a helpless victim under the merciless, increasing attack of your deeds. Now that you are in the world of action, prepare yourself for the transfer to the world of reckoning. Practice dying. "Die before you die."[7] Choose death. As a sign of death, choose death now; intend death; resolve death.

Make the hajj!

And the hajj, a sign of this return towards Him; He Who is Eternal; He Who is Infinite; He Who has No End, no Limit, no Similarity.

To return to Him means moving towards Absolute Perfection, Absolute Good, Absolute Beauty, Power, Knowledge and Value; truth means moving towards the Absolute; movement towards Absolute Perfection; that is, Eternal Movement. This means that you are a perpetual becoming, an infinite movement. God is not your resting place; rather God is your destination, a destination which will always remain a destination. God is not the final point in the course of your journey. Your journey, your eternal migration, is upon a road, a path which has no end point. It is a road which never ends. It is an absolute move; in this movement of yours in the world of being and in your own being, God is: eternal journeying and migration; orientation, not place of stay.

Not Sufism! Dying in 'God' and staying in 'God'.

But Islam. Returning towards God. *"Surely we belong to God and unto God is the Return."* (2:156) *"Unto God shall be returned all affairs."* (42:53)

Not annihilation, but movement.

Not 'in Him' but 'to Him'. God is not 'far' from you that you reach unto Him. God is closer to 'you' than 'you'.

To whom? To you.

And He is farther away than to be reached.

By who? Anyone. Anything.

It is the season; time has ripened; the time of meeting draws near; go to the place of the covenant (*mi'ad*) at the appointed time (*miqat*)! O you who have been called by God, it is time for the visit! It is the season. It is the appointed time.

O putrid clay. Visit with God.

You. O Family of God; you before whom the angels prostrated themselves; human being, confidant of God. *"In a sure abode, in the presence of a King Omnipotent."* (54:55) , history has metamorphosized you. Life has made you into a beast. O you who have made a covenant with God to worship Him alone and to rebel against anything other than He, now you are the worshipper of the taghut – an arrogant, despotic ruler who rebels against God; you are the servant of idols! *"That which you your-*

selves carved." (37:95)

O you who worship and pray to gods of the earth and not God of the Universe, God of the people, God of your own; O oppressor! O ignorant! O merchant of life, loser. The sacrifice of injustice and ignorance, loser to enslavement, abjectness, needs, the trampled upon by fear and greed!

O who life, society and history have made into a wolf or a fox or a rat or a lamb!

It is the season. Make the hajj! Go to the appointed time with the Great Friend of humanity. You have an appointment with He Who created you as a human being.

Flee from palaces of power, treasures of wealth, temples of deceit and degradation; from this herd of sheep whose shepherd is a wolf. Resolve to escape. Make the hajj to the House of God, the house of the people!

Ihram at the Place of the Appointed Time (*miqat*)

The appointed time, the moment of the beginning of the drama. You who have resolved to meet God and who have now come to the place of the appointed time must change your clothes behind the scene of the drama. Clothes? That which the 'youness' of you, the 'yourness' of your being human has wound within it; worn; for clothes cover a person and what a great lie that a person wears clothes! The being human of a human is hidden; it shows itself off in the clothes of a wolf, fox, rat or lamb. Clothes are a fraud, a kufr, that is, the covering over of the truth. The words 'clothes' (*libas*) has a very meaningful sense, as well, understood in the verb form of *ifti'al. Iltibaz* means mistake! To make a mistake! Clothes are a sign, are a separation, a manifestation, a mystery, a degree, a title, a privilege; the color, design and quality of it all mean:

'Me!'

And 'me' means 'not you'; 'not you, not us'; it means distinction and, therefore, discrimination. It means boundary and, thus, separation. And this 'me' is a race; is a nation; is a class; is a group; is a family; is a degree; is a situation; is a value; is an individual; and is not a 'human being'. Boundaries are numerous in the land of humanity. The sharp blade of the three-fold executioners of history — the children of Cain — has fallen into the midst of the children of Adam and has, piece by piece, cut mankind's unity

into: master-servant, ruler-condemned, full-hungry, rich-poor, master-slave, oppressor-oppressed, colonialist-colonialized, exploiter-exploited, brain washer-brain washed, powerful-weak, wealthy-agent, deceiver-deceived, aristocrat-abased, spiritual-physical, noble-common, landlord-serf, employer-laborer, prosperous-wretched, white-black, eastern-western, civilized-uncivilized, Arab-non-Arab.

Humanness has been divided up into races; races into nations; nations into classes; classes into sects, groups and families. Inside of each, again, position, reputation, degrees and honorary titles exist. Bit by bit they form an 'individual', a 'me' and all of these in different clothes, O actor!

Throw them away at the appointed time .

Put on the shroud.

Wash out all colors.

Wear white. Whiten and harmonize with all colors. Become all. Emerge from your 'me-ness' like a snake which sheds its skin. Become the people.

Become a minute particle in mingling with other particles, a drop lost in the sea.

Do not be 'someone' who has come to the place of the covenant.

Become like a blade of grass which appears at the appointed time.

Become a being who senses non-being or a non-being who senses being. "Die before you die."

Take off life's clothes.

Put on the clothes of death.

Here is the place of the appointed time.

Whoever you are, throw away all ornaments, signs, colors and patterns which the hand of life has clapsed over your body and has nourished you to become:

Wolf,
Fox,
Rat
Or lamb. Throw them all away at the appointed time.
Become human.
Be as you were in the beginning.
Be one.
Adam.
And as you will become in the end.
One – death.

Wear a two-piece cloth, one piece over your shoulder and one around your waist; a single color; white, unsewn, patternless, colorless, without any sign, without any indication that you are you; that you are not another.

At the place of the appointed time, the cloth worn by everyone; the cloth which you easily mistake with that of your companion.

Wear the cloth that you wear at the beginning of your journey towards God; wear it now at the beginning of your journey towards the House of God.

Here is the place of the appointed time.

There are certain areas called miqat (places of the appointed time) which lie upon the way of caravans coming from all corners of the earth and directing themselves towards the House of God.

Amazing! Here a noun of time has become a noun of place!

What does that mean?

It means there is also movement in a place.

That is, a place is also a movement.

That is, everything means time.

That is, place means time.

That is, never repose.

Yea. Is it not that a human being is not just 'being'? But is also a becoming, a becoming towards God. *"Unto God is the ultimate return."* (24:42) Amazing! Everything is movement, perfection. Death and life; life and death. Contradiction, change, direction! *"All things perish except His Face."* (35:18)

Everything is condemned to deterioration except what is turned towards Him.

And God? Absolute Being. Absolute Perfection. Absolute Eternity. The Absolute of Absolutes, too!

"Every day He is in a splendid manifestation." (55:29)

And the hajj: movement. Resolving upon a destination.

The sign of the return of mankind towards God.

Dig the grave of all of your 'me-nesses' in miqat. Bury your 'self' in it; bear witness to your own death; be the pilgrim to your own grave; create the ultimate fate of your life with your own hands; die in the place of the appointed time; be resurrected in the desert between 'the place of the appointed time' and 'the place of the appointment'; it is the place of the Day of Judgment, where, from horizon to horizon, are the shrouded, an agitated flood of 'the white clothed', the people, all in a single color, single pattern, no one re-recognizing the other, therefore no one re-finding the self; the 'me' has been left behind in the place of the appointed time; and now they are spirits who have been resurrected, they have taken on form, disregarding race, family, class, without name and without title. It is the place of resurrection, of blending together, of unity; a human manifestation of Divine Oneness, resurrection, fear, enthusiasm, excitement, astonishment, wonder and ecstasy!

Everyone is but a particle in the magnetic field of its givings and takings; God in the qiblah. Everybody is nothing and only – human; all directions are eliminated except for orientation towards Him; all nations, groups, humanity; the humanity of a tribe in the wilderness, having one qiblah in existence, in life.

Take off your clothes; desert all signs which distinguish you. Lose your 'self' in the multitude of the gathering of the crowd of people. Forget whatever life has attached to you; whatever is a recollection of 'you'; whatever tells of your system in the uproar of the gathering of the people; prohibit your 'self' all of these.

Wear the ihram. Ihram? "To make sacred." It is an infinitive used here as a noun and a noun for a kind of dress.

All 'me's' die in the place of the appointed time and all become 'us'.

Everyone sheds a skin and becomes human.

And you also bury your individuality and personality, become people, become the ummah. When you negate being 'me' – negate yourself – infiltrate into 'us', each person becomes a society, the individual becomes an ummah as *"Verily, Abraham was an ummah."* (16:120) And you now go to become Abraham-like.

Everyone becomes the other, one becomes all and all become one; the multitheistic society attains monotheism; it becomes an ummah and an ummah is a society upon the way. *Umm* means resolve, movement towards a destination, departure towards a qiblah, a gathering not 'to be' but 'to become', not for prosperity but for perfection, not for tranquility, but for movement; and, as a result, not management but leadership; not rule but imamate!

And now you and numerous you's and other me's. What am I saying? Other nothings! From the four corners of the world, all turn from themselves and face towards God; turn away from the swamp and face towards the Spirit of God; turn away from the detention camps of the world and face towards the Hereafter; turn away from relativities and expediencies and face towards the Absolute and the Truth; turn away from ignorance and tyranny and face consciousness and justice; and, finally, turn away from multitheism shirk, and face monotheism, tawhid. You have arrived in the place of the appointed time; you have put on the dress of the ihram; you will be mistaken for others. It is a gathering; it is a resurrection. Everyone takes a stranger as a friend and a foreigner in place of a relative. Everyone wears each other's shoes; every ihram could be your ihram.

All of those who have for years forgotten their being human; all of those who have become alienated by coercion, wealth, position, land or blood; all of those who have felt their 'cash on hand' to be their 'self', who have found their degrees and titles to be their 'self', have now all become their true 'selves', their human 'self'; all have become one person – human being – and other than that, nothing; all one adjective – haj – resolver – and nothing more.

Making Your Intention Known (*niyyah*)

You are at the threshold of the entrance; you want to begin. Before anything else, you must make your *niyyah*. *Niyyah?* What does it mean? Intending to go some place? *Nawaka'llah*, "May God be with you on your journey and protect you;" *intawi*, to move from place to place, to change from one state to another; *nawan:* a traveler's destination. *Nib,* an old she-camel; *niyaz:* granting needs; *nawan:* (date pits) conceive your fruit. *Niyah:* (destination), to stay; *nawan* (remoteness) the distance the traveler has before him. Intention: resolution; *niyata:* to be loyally attached to whatever is harmonic with itself. Need. Command. *Naw*: the person who intends to make the self ready for transformation, one who has in hand the belief of a group and the destiny of a society.

You are in the place of the appointed time, at the edge of a great change, a revolutionary alteration and transformation, a transition: from your house to the house of the people; from living to love; from self to God; from slavery to freedom; from hypocrisy, deception, deceit, degree, position, class, race to truth and sincerity; from covered to uncovered; from daily clothes to the clothes of eternity; from the clothes of carelessness and recklessness to the clothes of self-sacrifice, commitment and the ihram.

Make your intention known. As a date whose seed conceives. O shell! O absurd! Plant the seed of that consciousness of self in your conscience. Fill your hollow innerness with it. Do not be just a body. Mature as the seed matures. Make your being a shell to surround the seed of your faith. Become a 'being'. Be. Do not be a bubble. Kindle a flame in the darkness of your heart. Glow. Let yourself be filled. Overflow. Shine and let the radiance of Essence make you 'self-less' and make you your 'self'. O totally ignorant, always inattentive. Become aware of God. Become aware of people. Become conscious of self.

O you who have always been an instrument of labor. O you who have always been obliged, selected by the job, you have worked, but as habit, custom, coercion, now make your intention known, freely select consciousness of self; do so knowingly, with awareness.

A new way.
A new direction.
A new job.
A new being.
And...a new self.

The Ritual Prayer in the Place of the Appointed Time

You are in the miqat. You make your intention known and begin the hajj. That is, you sense that which you have begun. You are aware of what you are doing and why you are doing it. You even remove your clothes. You brush away yourself, become uncovered and put on the ihram and then stand for the ritual prayer. The ritual prayer of the ihram. Offer yourself in your new clothes to God. "Behold, O God, I stand before Thee, no longer the slave of Nimrod or the servant of the taghut but in the form of Abraham; no longer in the clothes of coercion, a coercive wolf, deceitful fox, greedy rat, humiliated and submissive lamb but in the clothes of a human being, in the clothes I will wear to meet Thee tomorrow when I shall rise from the dust."

This means: I am aware of my nature; I am nothing; rather, I am everything for I have become Thy servant in obedience; I have become free, through rebellion, from everything and everybody other than Thee; I am aware of the point of the final destiny of my life. I now select myself whatever fate has prescribed for a human being; I practice it.

How amazing is this ritual prayer which means something else in miqat, in the white shroud of ihram, at the threshold of the place of the covenant! It is as if we hear new words. It is not the repetition of a religious ritual. We are speaking to Him. We feel the heaviness of His presence upon ourselves:

"O Merciful! For Thou art caressing a friend! O Compassionate, for the sun of Thy Mercy extends beyond the borders of kufr and faith, worthiness and unworthiness, purity and impurity, and even friendship and animosity. Yea. I will praise no one but Thee for praise belongs to Thee. I will seek help from no power but Thee. O Thou Who art my only and sole Beloved. O Thou Who art my sole and only Helper. Guide all of us who have fallen into the waylessness of ignorance; who have not thrown away the misleadings of tyranny. We are the toys of our own weaknesses; the toys of powers other than Thee. Guide us upon the way of purity and awareness, truth and perfection, love and beauty; join us to the group Thou hast loved and blessed with goodness and not those against whom Thou art angry nor those who have gone astray."

fection, love and beauty; join us to the group you have loved and blessed with goodness and not those against whom You are angry nor those who have gone astray."

Every bowing (*ruku'*) in miqat, in the white dress of Resurrection Day, ihram, is the denial of every time we bowed our head before any fear, greed or false diety. Every prostration (*sajdah*) is a denial of every forehead which we humbly put on the earth before a palace of power.

The ritual prayer in miqat. Every rising and every setting, a message, a covenant that from now onwards, "O God, no rising or setting will be done except for Thee and before Thee.

"Peace be upon you, O Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, His servant and Messenger! Peace and the blessings of God be upon you who granted such mercy and blessings to mankind within this life and upon this earth.

"Peace be upon us, upon the pious believers and good-doers of God.

"Peace be upon you..."

These words come to life there.

These pronouns all return to their origins.

All allusions are near.

There , all are present.

Nothing and no one is absent in the place of the appointed time: God, Abraham, the Prophet of Islam, people, spirit, resurrection, paradise, salvation, freedom and love...

And now you are clothed in the clothes of people; in the clothes of unity; colorless, patternless clothes; in white clothes; the clothes of piety and death; the clothes of rebirth. And finally, the clothes of resurrection!

Ihram!

And you, O human being! Rejected of God! Plaything of Iblis! Exiled to the earth! Condemned to the strangeness, loneliness and anguish of the earth! Now you have returned in repentance and apology towards Him, in search of self.

No longer remiss, but released; yet under an obligation, an obligation which you accepted of your own free will, at the heighth of your free choice and awareness, a predestination you yourself chose; now you are bound to it; you are responsible; you are in ihram, in a sacred place; you are upon the way to the shrine (*haram*); you are upon the way to a sacred place at a sacred time and in the clothes of ihram; you are at the sacred boundaries of prohibitions.

What is ihram? To make sacred; to forbid.

Ihram? What things are forbidden in the state of sacred prohibitions? From what are you prohibited?

Prohibitions (*muharamat*)

Anything that recalls you to you; anything that distinguishes you from others; anything that represents who you are in life and what you do. And, finally, anything which is a sign of your, a sign of your system of life, a sign of your social system; whatever is reminiscent of the world. whatever you thought you could not leave behind; whatever is not humane; whatever recalls you to anything other than being a human being; whatever reminds you of the usual day to day things; whatever smells of your life prior to your miqat; whatever leads you to your past, buried life:

1. Do not look into a mirror so that your eyes fall upon yourself; let your 'self' be forgotten; forget your being.

2. Do not use perfume; do not smell good aromas, so your heart does not recall life's desires; so that desires do not arise within you; so that passions do not overtake you; so that pleasures are not recalled to you; for here the environment is filled with another perfume; breathe the fragrance of God; let the fragrance of love intoxicate you.

3. Do not give orders to anyone; enliven the sense of brotherhood; practice equality.

4. Do not bring harm to any creature, even the tiniest of insects; bring no harm; do not even expel by using force; be like Christ for a few days in this world ruled by the system of Caesars.

5. Pull out no plant from the soil of the sacred area;

break nothing; practice peace in relation to nature as well; kill the nature of violation and destruction within yourself.

6. Do not hunt; kill hard-heartedness within yourself.

7. Sexual intercourse is forbidden; do not even look with desire so that love not spread itself upon your existence.

8. Do not marry; do not partake in the marriage ceremonies of others.

9. Do not adorn yourself so that you may sense your self as you really are.

10. Do not use abusive language; do not debate; tell no lie; show no pride.

11. Wear no sewn clothes or clothes similar to ones that are sewn; do not hold up your sacred clothes even with a thread so that all ways towards distinction in appearances be closed.

12. Take up no weapon but, if necessary, it should not show.

13. Shade not your head from the sun; to seek refuge under a ceiling, an umbrella, inside a carriage or in a covered automobile is...forbidden!

14. Cover not your feet with socks or shoes.
15. Adorn not and carry no adornments.
16. Cover not your head.
17. Cut not your hair.
18 . Seek not the shade.
19. Cut not your nails.
20. Use no creams.
21. Bloody not your body or the body of others.
22. Extract no teeth.
23. Swear not upon God.
24. And, you, O woman! Cover not your face.

The hajj has commenced; move towards the Ka'bah in the sacred clothes of ihram under the protection of prohibitions; hasten towards God; cry out, *"Labbayk! Labbayk!"* God has invited you; He has called for you to come; now you have come; now you respond to Him: *"Labbayk.*

"Yea. O Lord. Yea. Praise and blessings belong to Thee and dominion! There is no partner for You. Yea."

Praise, blessings, dominion! Again negating the same three ruling powers: deception, exploitation and despotism, the trinity that has ruled over history: fox, rat and wolf... ruling over people who are all as lambs of God. The sound of God is heard in the desert; the call comes from every particle. It has filled the entire atmosphere between heaven and earth and all hear it as a call to them; they hear God calling them; they cry from the bottom of their hearts; *Labbayk, allahumma, labbayk.*

And you sense not your feet taking you forward for you are like a tiny particle of iron fillings which is attracted towards a powerful magnet. You are being carried forward; your feet drag behind you; you sense your two arms are transformed into two strong wings; you are flying amidst a flock of white birds in space; you move towards the ascent, towards the Simurgh...

The Ka'bah grows close and closer; the excitement increases and becomes more agitated; you rightly hear your heart beat; it is as if a wounded and wild creature is within you beating its head against the wall of your very being, wanting to break out and run away! You feel you are growing larger than yourself; you sense you are overflowing; you no longer fit within your form; within the narrow shoes upon the feet of your being, within the tight clothes, upon the body of your existence; tears cannot be restrained; it is as if little by little you sink into a space filled with God; this presence upon your skin, upon your heart, upon your intellect, in the depths of your primordial nature (*fitrat*), in the reflected light of each piece of gravel, on the face of every rock, at the mid part of every mountain in the far ambiguity of every horizon in the depth of the desert; you see only Him; you find only Him; only He exists; other than He, all is wave, foam – lie.

Love rains upon the desert and dampens the earth.
And whereas the feet of a man sink into mud,
Your feet enter love.

You move and sense your own annihilation; you move away from self and near to Him; all become He and you become Him; all and you, nothing – a forgotten memory – which fell off your shoulders in miqat; and you, lightened of the burden of self, move towards the place of the covenant; you sense you no longer exist; a particle of ardency; nothing more; you are only a movement; you are only a direction; you move forward having no right to step back; you face Him; you vanish in Him like a part of a cloud sucked up by the desert sun.

The heart of existence pulsates and space overflows with God; you have overflowed from God.

Love rains upon the desert and dampens the earth.

And whereas the feet of a man sink into mud, your feet enter love.

You arrive at the outskirts of Makkah; the city is near; you reach a sign here, a sign which says, "This is the boundary of the sacred area"; Makkah is a sacred area; in this area, war and aggression are forbidden. Whosoever escapes from the enemy and takes refuge in the sacred area is immune from pursuance. The hunting and killing of animals and even the pulling up of plants from the earth is forbidden here. After the attack of the Prophet upon Makkah to free the Ka'bah from idol-worship, the Prophet himself, with his own hands, once again marked off this area. He strengthened the old tradition to preserve the sacred area, to prohibit aggression and murder in this area.

You pass this border and now you enter the sacred area, Suddenly the tumultuous cries of *"Labbayk"* which have reached their peak, cease.

Silence.

That is, "You have arrived."

He Who calls you is here. You have reached His House. Silence!

A silence in His Presence, in the sacred area, the sacred area of God.

You move forward; the desire for the Ka'bah is oppressive.

And now, the city.

Like a large bowl, all of its surrounding walls – mountains – every one of its streets, alleys and lanes – a valley, a fissure in the mountain, a cut-away, from all directions pouring down towards the base of this great mountainous nest – here is the sacred mosque: the Masjid al-Haram, in the center of it, the Ka'bah!

You pass through the mountainous spirals of the town; step by step you move closer to the Ka'bah; you pour down like a flood and the nameless, the undistinguished flow onto the bed of the valley; a street, towards the depth of the valley, the Masjid al-Haram; it flows and you, a drop!

Step by step you descend; step by step its greatness nears. In the words of an awakened, sensitive sympathizer, "We always have the habit of climbing upwards, of moving towards heights and loftiness to reach greatness, in particular when greatness is Divine, when words are about the Divine angelic world and here, the opposite. However much you descend from peaks, however much you come down from the heights, you grow closer to God!"

Does it mean that through humility and humbleness you reach greatness and majesty? Attaining great heights through servitude? That is, do not search for God in the heavens, in the meta, but upon this very earth, upon this inferior soil, in the depths of the material of a stone. You can find Him, see Him. You must find the Way correctly. You must learn how to see correctly...and perhaps, a secret of the fate of mankind – descending into the dust and arising before God!

The Ka'bah is close by. Silence. Contemplation. Love.

Each step is more tumultuous; each breath more fearful; moment by moment, the weight of His presence, heavier; you dare not blink your eyes; your breath does not come easily; you are nailed to your vehicle; in a state of silence from head to toe; perplexed, ardent, leaning a little forward, all your body, eyes; your only look forward; in front, opposite you, the qiblah; how heavy is the weight of bearing the anticipation of the visit; how difficult is the anticipation of seeing such greatness. How can the thin walls of your feelings and the unsure veil of your heart bear it all?

You find your way down through the twists and turns of the valley; at every curve you pass, your heart sinks: "Now, the Ka'bah." The Ka'bah, this qiblah of existence, faith, love; the direction for our daily and nightly ritual prayers; towards it we pray every morning, noon, afternoon, evening and night; we die facing it; are buried facing it; our home; our grave, and, now, only a few steps away from it and in a few moments, before it, before my sight.

The Ka'bah

You are at the threshold of the Masjid al-Haram. Now the Ka'bah before you! An enormous courtyard and in the center, a hollow cube, nothing more!You suddenly tremble! Wonder, amazement! Here...there is no one. Here...there is nothing. Nothing to even see.

An empty room, that is all.

Your senses are fixed on a bridge, thinner than a strand of hair, sharper than the edge of a sword. Is the qiblah of our faith, our love, our ritual prayer, our life and our death just this? A pile of dark, rough stones, placed upon each other, spaces unevenly and inexperiencedly filled between with mortar, nothing more!

Suddenly a doubt runs through you.

Where is this? Where have I come? I understand a palace: the beauty of an artistic architecture; I understand a temple: a sacred magnificence and spiritual silence under high, grand, elegant, artistic ceilings; I understand a tomb: the burial place of a great person, a heroic genius, Prophet, Imam!

But this...? In the midst of an uncovered area, an empty room! No architecture, no art, no beauty, no inscription, no tile, no plaster-moulding, not...even the burial place of a Prophet, an Imam or a grave of an eminent person to whom I can pilgrimage to recall the person that I had come to see, so that my feelings can attach themselves to a point, a visage, a reality, an object; and finally, a person, thing, place; sit and relate.

There is nothing here; there is no one here.

Suddenly you understand how good it is that no one is here! No phenomenon draws your attention; suddenly you feel the Ka'bah is a roof, a roof from which to ascend; to suddenly leave the Ka'bah behind and open your wings in space; then you feel absoluteness!

You sense eternity.

That which you never sensed in your divided life; that which you do not find in your world of relativities; that which you cannot feel; you can only philosophize about; can be seen here: absoluteness, eternity, non-direction. He!

How good that there is no one here; how good it is that the Ka'bah is empty; you gradually realize you did not come to visit a shrine. You have made the hajj. This is not your final destination; the Ka'bah is a sign so the way is not lost; it is only a sign, an arrow; it only shows you direction. You have made the hajj; you have made the resolution, resolved upon the absolute, moving towards eternity, eternal motion, towards Him; not to the Ka'bah; the Ka'bah is not the end of the Way; it is the beginning! Here the end is your own disability, death and your stopping; that which exists here is movement, direction and nothing else.

Here is the place of the covenant, the meeting place of God, Abraham, the Prophet of Islam and people! And you? As long as you are 'you', 'you' are absent here; become people; "You who are wearing the cloth of the people, the people are the beloved of God. They are the Family of God. God is more zealous of His Family than anyone else!" And here, His sacred area, within His sanctuary, His House.

This is the house of the people. *"Verily, the First House made for the people is the one at Makkah , blessed, and a Guidance for (the people) of the world!"* (3:96)

And as long as you remain 'you', there is no place for you in the sacred area.

This is the *bayt al-'atiq*. *'Atiq* comes from the root *'itq* meaning to free a slave. *'Atiq,* freed! A house which is free from private ownership, the reign of tyrants and rulers. No one has power over it. The owner of the House is God, the household – people.

When you travel 48 kilometers from your home, town, village, you are a traveler and recite a partial ritual prayer, the ritual prayer of a traveler and yet, here, regardless of which corner of the world you have come from, you may recite your prayers in full because you are not a traveler; you have returned to your residence, your town, place secure, your house. You were a stranger in your country. You were a traveler. Here, O reed torn from its rushy bed! O exile upon the earth! Human being: you have returned to your rushy bed, to your real birthplace.

God and His Family; people, this beloved Family of the world now in their house and you, as long as you are 'you', are a stranger, without connection, cut off, without refuge, a homeless being. Leave you-ness. Leave 'self' outside. Enter the house. Join this Family. If you have buried yourself in miqat, if you have become 'the people', here, like a relative, friend, close relation, as one of God's Family, you will have entered the House. You will see Abraham at the threshold, this old rebel against history and this kafir to all earthly lords, this great lover, humble servant of the God of monotheism.

He laid the foundation of this House with his two hands.

The Ka'bah upon the earth, a secret of God in the universe.

What is it constructed of? How is it decorated? How is it ornamented?

Pieces of dark stones which were cut from Mount 'Ajun near Makkah, laid down simply, one upon another, without any art, special technique or decoration, that is all!

And what is its name, its properties, its titles?

Ka'bah.

A cube. That is all!

Why a cube? Why so simple, without distinction or ornament? God is shapeless, colorless, without similarity, whatever form or condition mankind selects, sees or imagines is not God.

God is Absolute.

Is without direction.

It is you who take direction before Him.

This is why you direct yourself to the Ka'bah and the Ka'bah itself is directionless. The thoughts of a person cannot conceive of non-direction. Why? Whatever you imagine a mystery of His Existence – absolute non-direction – of necessity, you assume a direction; this is not the mystery of God.

How can non-direction be revealed upon the earth? In this way only: all opposing directions be gathered together.

So that each direction is negated by its opposing side. Then only does the mind understand non-direction.

How many directions are there?

Six.

What form contains these six directions?

The cube!

The cube means all directions.

And all directions means non-direction.

Its exact secret?

The Ka'bah.

"Therefore, wherever you turn, there is the Face of God." (2:115)

Because of this, inside the Ka'bah, whatever direction you wish to face for the ritual prayer, you face Him and outside the Ka'bah, which ever way you face, you face Him.

What other form – except the cube – faces north, south, east or west, towards the earth or towards the heavens; the Ka'bah faces all, faces none, everywhere and nowhere, all directions and, yet, no directions, God!

His mystery: the Ka'bah!

But wonder! To the west of the Ka'bah is an addition, changing its shape and giving a direction to it.

What is this?

A short, arched wall facing the Ka'bah.

What is it named?

The hijr of Isma'il!

Hijr? What does that mean?

Skirt! And it actually resembles a skirt. The skirt of a dress, the dress of a woman!

Yea.

An Ethopian woman.

A slave!

A black slave.

The slave of another woman!

A slave, so humble, that the other woman chose her as her husband's mistress. That is, she was so abased that she will never be considered as being a rival wife.

And her husband slept with her for her to bear a child.

A woman who in human systems lacked every dignity, every honor, and then God united the mystery of her skirt with the mystery of His existence.

This is the skirt of Hajar's dress!

The skirt which nourished Isma'il.

Here is Hajar's home.

Hajar is buried near the third pillar of the Ka'bah.

Amazing! No one, not even a Prophet should be buried in the mosque.

And here, the House of God, wall to wall with the house of a female slave.

And the House of God, the burial place of a mother.

What am I saying?

God's non-direction is only directed from her skirt! The Ka'bah has extended towards her! There is only a small space between this arch and the house. One can pass through this space when circling the House.

But circling around the Ka'bah, the mystery of monotheism, without circling around her skirt is not accepted.

It is not a hajj.

It is a command. A Command of God.

All of humanity, in the always of the ages, all who believe in monotheism, all who have accepted God's invitation, should, in their circumambulation of love around God, around the Ka'bah, circumambulate around the skirt of her dress as well.

Her house, her grave, her skirt, also, are part of the circumambulation; are a part annexed to the Ka'bah.

For the Ka'bah, this absolute, non-direction is only directed towards this skirt.

The Ka'bah is directed towards the skirt of an African slave, a good mother; the perpetual place of circumambulation of humanity.

The God of monotheism, seated alone upon His Omnipotent Throne, rejecting all galaxies behind Him, beyond everything which exists, He is Alone, and, in His heavenly kingdom, Unique.

But...it seems as if from among all His creatures, in His infinite Creation, He selected one.

The noblest of His creatures, the human being.

And among all? A woman.

And among all?

A black woman.

And among all?

A black slave woman.

And among all?

A black female slave of a woman.

The most humiliated of His creatures!

He has placed her beside Himself, a place beside His House

Becomes her neighbor.

And now

Under the roof of this House, two:

One God,

And the other, Hajar,

The unknown soldier has been so chosen in the nation of monotheism.

All of the hajj is joined to the memory of Hajar.

And *hijrat* (migration), the greatest deed, the greatest command is derived from the word *hajar.*

And *muhajir* (migrator), the greatest Divine-like human being, a Hajar-like person. "A migrator is a Hajar-like human being."

And what is migration?

A Hajar-like deed. In Islam, it is to go from savageness towards civilization and this journey means to move from kufr to Islam, because *t'arub ba'd al-hijrat* , in the language of people, means savagery after becoming civilized; in the words of Islam, it means to return to kufr after having found faith. Thus kufr means savagery and religion means civilization.

And *hjr*, an Ethiopian word, means town, city, in the language of Hajar and Hajar, a black African, Ethiopian slave woman.

The manifestation of a pre-civilization human being and yet, here, the root of civilization. Thus, a Hajar-like human being means a civilized one. A Hajar-like movement means the movement of humanity towards civilization.

And now, in the movement of humanity around God's House, again, Hajar. Your place of circumambulation, O migrator who has resolved on God, is the Ka'bah of God and the skirt of Hajar.

What do we see?

Our understanding cannot contain it!

The sensitivities of a human being in the age of liberation and humanism have not the power to bear this meaning!

God in the house of a black, African, female slave.

Circumambulation (*tawaf*)

Now, this is the Ka'bah, in the midst of a whirlpool, a roaring whirlpool which whirls around and circumambulates the Ka'bah, a constant point in the center, and other than this, everything moves in its surroundings, circle-like around it.

Eternal constancy and eternal movement!

A sun in the center and around it, each one, a star, in their sphere, circling around the sun.

Constancy, movement, and harmony = circumambulation.

An imagination of a solar system? Or the incarnation of all of the world? In the world view of monotheism?

God is the Heart of the universe, is the Axis of existence, is the Center of the universe which everything circumambulates around and you, in this system, whether in the Ka'bah or the universe, are a particle, a particle in movement, and each movement, in a place; you are a continuous movement; just a state and with each breath, a state constantly in change, in becoming, in circumambulation but always and everywhere your distance from Him and the Ka'bah, constant, for there Your nearness and farness relates to what ray you have selected in this rotating circle. Whether near or far, you never touch the Ka'bah, never stop by the Ka'bah, for there is no pausing, because for you there is no constancy, because there is no unity of being; monotheism exists. The whirlpool of human beings rotates around the Ka'bah and that which can be seen is only the human being. It is here that you can see the people and not see man or woman, not see this nor that, me or him or you or them; see universals, not particulars for the individual has been dissolved in the totality of human beings. It is the annihilation of the individual but not in God, in 'us', in the 'human being', in 'people', it is better to say: in the ummah! But annihilation in the direction of God; for God , in the circumambulation of God.

It means the annihilation of the individual in people; the survival of the individual in the people. For God and the people are in one orientation, are of one rank; that is, here the way is towards God, passes through the people, from individuality, to aloneness; here is no Way to there. Your monasticism is not in a monastery, but is in society; self-sacrifice, sincerity, self-negation, bearing bondages, deprivations, tortures, anguishes and accepting dangers in the arenas of clashes and for the sake of people that you reach God. The Prophet has said, "Every religion has a kind of monosticism and the monasticism of my religion is jihad."

It is because of this that in circumambulating, you should not turn towards the Ka'bah; enter inside the Ka'bah; or sit or stand in the Ka'bah. You must enter the group, vanish in the circumambulators, drown in this human whirlpool; it is in giving of what one oneself needs, self-sacrifice, *ithar*, in leaving the self among the circumambulating masses and in joining the congregation that you make the hajj; become a haj; respond to God's invitation with *labbayk;* find your way to God's sanctuary.

What do you see? The Ka'bah standing. And surrounding it? A white, uniform, single-colored, single-patterned flood, bearing no distinctions, no signs nor symbols, giving no superiority to any individual; no one can be distinguished. It is only here that you see universality with your own eyes. Outside the Ka'bah the individual is a reality, a particular, is an objective, the universal of a subjective concept. The human being is a meaning, an idea, an intellectual, subjective and logical concept. In the external world, there are only human beings and whoever exists is either Hasan or Husayn, is a man or a woman, is an easterner or a westerner. Here all realities have been effaced. A universal concept, intellectual or subjective truth has found external, objective reality. Now it is only human beings who circumambulate the Ka'bah; only people and no one else.

And you, as long as you remain 'you', you remain outside the circumambulation; you stand still as an observer on the shore of this whirlpool of humanity. You stand still! Therefore you are not; therefore you are a stranger. You are an individual, a nothing, a particle of a galaxy which has been thrown into space and disappears. You must come into being. Here they teach you that only in the negation of self will you attain proof; slowly but surely, sacrificing yourself to others, to the ummah, will you, little by little, bit by bit, achieve self; will you discover self; will you realize the true Self; and then, when in self, suddenly, in a revolutionary way, in giving over to death, you will be annihilated in a red death so that when you achieve martyrdom, you become a witness. Martyrdom (*shahadat*) means presence, means life, means whatever or whoever is perpetually present, is perceptible; a martyr is one who perpetually exists, is present, an observer, a visible and objective example, an eternal, living being!

"Reckon not those who were slain upon God's Way to

be dead; nay, they are alive with their Lord, by Him provided." (3:169)

'Upon God's Way' means the way of the masses. Both are the same. There is no way from individuality to Allah. If you ask, "Then why individual worship?": in order to develop the self, to nourish the self; to reach the threshold of ithar, self-sacrifice; to find the merit of putting aside self-interests for the congregation; so that you become a human being; because when the individual is annihilated, the human being remains; the human being is God's vice-gerent in nature as long as God is God; the human being is His vice-gerent, is His Shadow, is His Sign, that is, is human; in this eternal dying to self, you are reborn and will remain eternally; a drop isolated from the sea is dew, which lives only at night; its life is one night; it is a resident which vanishes with the first smile of light.

But it is in joining the stream that you become eternal; find flow to attain the sea.

Why are you standing still? O dew! Beside the fine, rhythmic, wavy whirlpool which harmoniously narrates the story of Creation's system, join the whirlpool;step forward.

Now, you want to join the people; you must make your intention known to become conscious; to know what you are doing; to know why you are doing it; for God, not self; for Truth, not expediency!

For here, every action has a reckoning; a precise system governs this continuous movement, for the universe is so.

The Black Stone (*hajar al-aswad*) the Oath of Allegiance (*bayat*)

Enter the circumambulation from the corner at the Black Stone. It is here that you join the system of the universe; you join the people in the whirlpool of the masses; you vanish like a drop and you remain; you find your sphere; you begin your movement; you are placed in a circuit; in the circuit of God but in the course of the masses.

To begin, you must touch the Black Stone. Touch it with your right hand, and, without hesitation, give yourself over to the whirlpool.

This stone is a mystery of the hand, a right hand. Whose hand? The Right Hand of God. "The Black Stone is the Right Hand of God upon the earth."

A lone individual, in order to live, or a lone tribe, in order to have support in the desert, concludes a treaty of friendship and mutual support with a chief of a tribe, with the tribes and forms a confederation with them. People conclude a treaty with a leader for a goal. This treaty is called a *bayat* or allegiance. Its form?

When you form an allegiance with a leader, head of a tribe, you extend your right hand and he places his right hand on yours and in this way, you agree together and become allies.

And it was the custom that when you placed your hand within the hand of another in allegiance, you were freed of all previous allegiances. And now the moment of choice is here, choosing your way, your goal and destiny at the beginning of the movement, at the threshold of departure from 'self' and being drowned in others, joining people and becoming harmonious with the congregation; you must give your allegiance to God. God has stretched out His Hand to you. Extend your right hand. Ally yourself with Him. Become His ally. Break all previous treaties and ties. Break your alliances with coercion, wealth and deception; break your treaties with the lords of the earth, heads of tribes, the aristocratic Quraysh, 'masters of houses'. Leave aside everything . Be freed.

"The Hand of God is above their hands." (48:10)

Sense the Hand of God upon yours. Caress it. This Hand is above their hands – those who tied your hands in their allegiance.

You are freed from allegiance to others; you have given your hand to God. You have renewed the covenant of your fitrat (primordial nature). You have become responsible and an ally of God!... Join the masses. Do not stand still. Move. Find your circuit. Select. Give your self to the congregation. This is circumambulation. Enter.

Like a brook, which joins a great and powerful river, step by step, you grow distant from your still and separate 'self'; you join the congregation; you circle and endeavor for the ray of your circumambulating circle to grow closer to the House; you sense that you do not go alone but move with the congregation; little by little, you sense you do not move; it is the congregation that takes you; your feet, which have always supported your individuality are being released; are out of work; the power of the congregation, the movement of the congregation, the endeavor of the congregation, the allure of the congregation, the beloveds of the world have tightly embraced you; you are no longer on your own two feet; you are now under the control of others; you do not exist; only the congregation exists; the more you move to the inside, the more the pressure of the congregation increases; it presses itself upon you; the congregation cannot bear 'you' who still have 'me-ness'; it destroys you; it magnetizes you; it digests you in the eternal, living, moving body of the congregation: people, human being ; you are a drop of blood, living, eternal.

Flowing, not by self but in congregation.

And you join the congregation.

Not as an expediency but for love.

And see the God of Abraham; the connection of a servant with Self is found in the connection of the individual with the congregation; how subtle, beautiful and deep! He allures you to the congregation with the love of Self. You have come to visit God and you find yourself in the midst of the commotion of the masses; He has called you to His House, to the solitude of His visit; now you have come all this way and He says to you: join the congregation; go with the congregation; do not enter the inside of the House; do not stand beside the House; do not even face towards the House; do not circumambulate facing the House; move shoulder to shoulder with the congregation; face forward; the Ka'bah is the qiblah and in the circumambulation, if you leave the circuit and face the qiblah, you have wasted the circumambulation, do not hesitate; do not go left or right; do not turn back; do not turn your head back; you are beside the Ka'bah; do not look at the qiblah because the qiblah is before you.

Now you have become part of the order of creation;

you have been located in the circuit of this system; you have entered the gravity of the sun of the universe and , like a star, from left to right, you are circumambulating around God. You whirl and whirl and little by little you sense that you are nothing; you do not recollect your 'self'; do not recognize your 'self'; only love exists; the allurements of love and you are magnitized.

You whirl and whirl and nothing exists; there is only He and you are a non-being, a non-being who senses being or an existence who senses non-being. You whirl and whirl and feel that you are a point, a point before and in this circumambulation, you, a continuous line, a circuit, you are only a movement; you are a circumambulation; you are a hajj. His circumambulation, His hajj and you, a 'submission'; you are a 'trustee'; a 'bestowed upon ; higher than freedom, a pre-determinism which you yourself have chosen.

Love has reached its peak; love has reached towards the Absolute and you from your 'self'; you have substracted your 'self'; you have become singular; you realize that little by little you melt in Him; little by little you vanish in Him; you become head to toe, love, sacrificed.

If love is to be described with movement, how would this movement be?

The butterfly has taught us long ago.

The Ka'bah is the center of love, you are the point of a compass, wandering in this circle.

Hajar has taught us.

The great Beloved, the great Ally of human beings — God — orders her: "Take your nursing child; migrate from the city, land and cultivation; move to this frightening valley," where even a plant, a thistle, is afraid to appear. She fully surrenders and carries out the Command, the Command which only love can accept and only love can understand.

A woman alone; a child alone; in the depths of a distant valley; in the midst of these dry, burned out, stern mountains where the stones are all solidified lava.

How is it possible without water? Without habitation? With nobody around?

But...He has so Commanded; He has so desired; trust in Him; absolute trust,; that which intellect, reasoning and logic cannot understand; life...needs water; a child, milk; a human being, a companion; a woman, a guardian; a mother, a supporter; alone, a friend; and weak, a helper...

Yea. But love can replace all these non-availabilities; one can live with love if the spirit recognizes love; one can fight with empty hands, if a mujahid is armed with love; O lonely, weak female slave, child, mother, lean on Him; secure your life with love, trust.

*

At the end of the seventh circle, leave the circumambulation.

Seven? Yea.

Here seven is not six plus one. It means, "My circumambulation around God; my self-sacrifice to the masses is everlasting, is infinite."

Continuously circle Him in the way of the masses; it is the hajj, not a visit to a shrine.

Seven recalls the creation of the universe.

And you, in circumambulation, do you not find yourself a particle from the universe? Is not circumambulation around a center, a drama of existence?

The world view of monotheism, its interpretation through movement!

And now the two cycle ritual prayer, here, in the Station of Abraham.

Where is this? The Station of Abraham? A piece of stone with two footprints, the footprints of Abraham. Abraham stood upon this stone and laid the Black Stone of the Ka'bah in place.

He had stood on this stone and had built the Ka'bah.

It shakes you up! Do you understand? It means putting your feet in place of those of Abraham. "Who?" "You."

Ah, what this monotheism does to a person! How difficult it is . Sometimes it makes you nothing and sometimes it makes you everything. Sometimes it does not bear your being 'you'; sometimes it pulls you to putrid clay; sometimes it elevates you to the heights of the Divine World so that you kneel, knee to knee before God; it takes you to the solitary sanctuary of God; it calls you 'a member of the Divine Family'; it sees you as the vice-gerent of God.

It beats you, pounds you, negates you, dissolves you; it annihilates you, belittles you, makes you bend your head in servitude; causes you to place your forehead on the earth in prostration and then it calls to you:

"O friend! O beloved! O companion of My solitude; confident of My sanctuary, My mysteries; bearer of My trust; My audience; goal of My creation; companion of My privacy!"

An hour before, beside the shore of the circumambulating whirlpool, He had hit you with the rain of His reproach; you standing in the 'you' of your 'you-ness' were placed upon the feet of your individuality, beside the people; you were a spectator of the masses; He called you a valueless particle, putrid clay, dried mud, alluvial flood, like baked earth and a piece of potted clay; the flowing, moving flood has a destination which makes the hajj and does not stand still; takes on no rottenness; does not become putrified; but goes, pure, roaring and raging, pounding down and finds a Way, rock breaker, barrier destroyer, and, finally, a garden and habitation, the streams of Paradise in the desert; and you who remain from the flood, become sediment, become glued to the earth, turn into dried clay and become hard, rigid and cracked. *"He created the human being from dry clay like that of earthen vessels."* (55:14)

And you cover the earth, the farms, the flowers and plants; thousands upon thousands of seeds where in every one the ardency and rapture of regeneration awaits impatiently for the splitting, opening and appearance from the soil to scatter leaves and fruit; to grow tall under the sky, under the sun; to open lips; you bury them under the earth; you make them rot; you make them die; you destroy them.

"While indeed fails he who pollutes it." (91:10)

The flood flows, intoxicated, clear, life-giving and with Christ-like breath.

And if you remain in a hole, isolated in monasticism, in individuality, in the pool of being as you be, isolated, silent and imprisoned, surrounded by your 'self's' individuality, whether you receive pleasure or mortify yourself, you will rot and turn into a swamp; the worms of hundreds of diseases will nest in your heart; will regenerate, will be reborn, will die in your soul and change the color of your skin; your features will change; your perfume will change; and you will become the grave of a corpse, become a marsh; you will rot, become a swamp. *"Putrid clay."* (15:27)

O how good it is to emerge from a stone;
Moving head to head with the stones;

Moving smoothly if there is a plain;
Descending fast if there is a valley;
Your heart, however,
Is like a swamp –
Stagnant, motionless, calm and silent.
Flow; become a flood –
Pound, sweep, wash
And arise.
Make the hajj!
Join the whirlpool of circumambulating masses.
Circumambulate!

And now, an hour later, after circumambulation, when your head had descended into the sea of 'annihilation', into the lover masses, into the whirlpool of the circumambulators of humanity, you drowned; you released mortal 'self' – the 'self' which faces itself – for survival is in the masses who face towards God; and you swarmed in the wave of non-existence; you rotated in the course of the masses upon God's circuit; then you were placed in the orbit of eternity, in the orbit of the infinite sphere.

Now you have become Abraham!

The Station of Abraham

Your Divinely created self, the Spirit of God which was within you, was in the swamp of the 'you-ness' of you! Your head arises from the whirlpool. From where? From the same corner where you began under the Hand of God; the Right Hand of God; now you have become 'self'.

You have attained your real 'me' by annihilating all of your false 'me's'.

You are in the pure, white dress of ihram in the sanctuary of God, in the role of Abraham.

You stand in the Station of Abraham, step in the footprint of Abraham, stand facing God and recite your ritual prayer for Him.

You are Abraham, history's great idol-destroyer, the founder of monotheism in the world, who carried the mission to guide the people upon his shoulders, the 'patient-rebellious', the 'rebel-guide', a Prophet; anguish in his soul; love in his heart; enlightened mind and...an axe in his hand.

The manifestation of faith arising from out of the heart of infidelity (kufr); the gyser of monotheism (tawhid) arising from out of the swamp of multitheism (shirk).

Abraham – the idol destroyer of mankind's tribe – from the home of Azar – the idol-carver of his tribe!

The idol-destroyer, Nimrod-slayer, crusher of ignorance and tyranny; the enemy of sleep; the rebel against the tranquility of humiliation and the security of oppression;

the leader of a tribe; the pioneer of the Movement: life, motion, direction, idea, hope, faith and monotheism.

You are Abraham! Step into the midst of the fire – the fire of tyranny, ignorance – in order to save humanity from the fire – the fire of tyranny, ignorance.

The fire which is part of the destiny of each responsible human being, responsible for illumination and salvation.

But the God of monotheism turns the fire of Nimrodians into a red rose for the Abrahamians!

You will not be burned. You will not turn into ashes. The purpose was that you move through jihad by going towards...the fire.

So that the 'self' is offered in moving to save the masses from the fire,

Until...the most painful of martyrdoms.

You are Abraham! Sacrifice your Isma'il with your own two hands. Place your knife at his throat.

In order to remove the knife from the throat of the masses, the masses who have continuously been slaughtered at the feet of palaces of power built from plundered treasures and at the threshold of deceiving, humiliating temples, place the blade against the throat of your own Isma'il so that you gain the power to take the blade away from the executioner.

But...the God of Abraham Himself pays the ransom for all Isma'ils.

You do not kill. You do not lose your Isma'il. The purpose is to move in the Way of Faith to the point where you have sacrificed your Isma'il with both hands.

Until the most painful of martyrdoms.

And now, O you who have come from the circumambulation of love, you are standing at the Station of Abraham; you have reached the Station of Abraham!

And when Abraham had reached here, he had passed the many phases of his eventful life from the breaking of idols, the destroying of Nimrod, the bearing of torture, the suffering of the fire, the struggling against Iblis, the sacrificing of Isma'il and...migrations, wanderings, lonelinesses, tortures and passing from prophethood to imamate. *"Behold, I make you an Imam for the people."* (2:124)

From individuality to the congregation; from being the son of the house of Azar, the idol-carver, to becoming the founder of the House of Monotheism!

And now, he stands here, the snow of age upon his head, at the end of a life which resembles a history, appointed to build the House, to install the Black Stone, the Hand of God in the House of God; and his partner – Isma'il – who carries stones and hands them to his father. While standing upon this stone, his father lays the foundation of the House and builds it!

O wonder! Isma'il and Abraham are building the Ka'bah; Isma'il and Abraham – one passed through the fire and the other, the altar of sacrifice. Now, both are agents of God, responsible for the masses, architects of the most ancient temple of monotheism upon the earth, the first House of the People in history, the House of the Free, liberty, the Ka'bah of love, worship, a sanctuary, a mystery among the mysteries of the tent of 'cover, chastity and the angelic world'.

And now you are standing in the Station of Abraham, stepping in the footprints of Abraham, upon the last step of the ladder of Abraham's descent, at the highest peak of Abraham's *miraj* , in the closest distance of Abraham to nearness...

The Station of Abraham!

And you, the founder of the Ka'bah, the architect of the House of Freedom, the founder of monotheism, responsible, lover, aware, idol-destroyer, leader of the tribes, opposed to Nimrod's oppression, in combat against the ignorance of multitheism, in jihad against the temptations of Iblis, the satan (khanas) who places temptation in the breasts of the people.

Bearing homelessness, anguish, danger, fire and the slaughter of your Isma'il; and now, no longer a House for your 'self' or a base for your 'Isma'il' but a House for the People, a shelter for the shelterless, a place secure for those pursued, the fugitives, the injured, the hunted who, bloodied and in fear, wander the earth, frightened and wounded; who find no shelter as everywhere Nimrod is in pursuit.

A torch in this dark and longest night of the winter solistice.

A cry on this night of tyranny.

A sanctuary, secure, clean and free for humanity, for the Family of God – the people – because everywhere disgrace and insecurity rule. They have made the earth into a grand house of prostitution, a place of murder, where every deed is forbidden except aggression and discrimination. O you who appear in Abraham's role, who stand in Abraham's Station, who stand upon the footsteps of Abraham and who give the hand of allegiance to the Hand of Abraham's God:

Live like Abraham and in your own age, be the architect of the Ka'bah of faith. Move your people out from the stagnant swamp of life, from the dead-like living, from the quiet sleep of the abasement of tyranny and from the darkness of ignorance; give them direction; call them to the hajj; circumambulate.

And you, O ally of God! O in step with Abraham! O you who have come from the circumambulation, from the annihilation of 'self' in the circumambulating masses! You who have emerged in the shape of Abraham, who are standing in place of the architect of the Ka'bah, founder of the sacred city, the Masjid al-Haram, and face to face with your ally – God!

Make your land a sacred area
For you are in the sacred area.
Make your age a sacred time
For you are in the sacred time.
Make the earth into a sacred mosque
For you are in the Masjid al-Haram.
For 'the earth is God's mosque',
And you see that:
It is not.

The Search (*sa'y*)

You end your prayers of circumambulation in the Station of Abraham and resolve to go to Mas'a', located between two mountains – Safa and Marwah – a distance of more than 300 meters. You traverse this distance between two mountains seven times. You descend from Safa, walk until you are opposite the Ka'bah. You run; then return to your normal motion; you walk the rest of the way until the foot of Marwah.

The endeavor, the search is a struggle; a searching movement; having a purpose; hurrying and running.

While circumambulating, you were in the role of Hajar.
And in the Station, as both Abraham and Isma'il.
Now that you begin the searching movement,
You again return to the role of Hajar!

Everything is one here, all forms, moulds, appearances, titles, characteristics, personalities, limits, boundaries, distances, symbols, colors and patterns have been erased; have vanished; humanity uncovered and uncovered humanity.

Faith and love, belief and deed and nothing more!

Here no word is mentioned about any person, not even Hajar, Abraham or Isma'il for these are merely words and ideas here, not individuals or persons. Whatever exists is movement and constancy, humanity and Divinity and, in the midst, only discipline.

The hajj is this, is making an attempt. It is a continuous movement towards a constant direction and the whole world is this.

And now,

A search.

Here you are Hajar.

A woman from a despised and non-honored African race; a female slave; a black Ethiopian woman; the slave girl of a woman: Sarah.

All of these exist in mankind's systems, in a system of shirk but in the system of tawhid, this slave woman is addressed by God, is the mother of great Prophets of God, Messengers of God and manifestation of the most magnificent and dearest of values which God creates.

She is the first heroine in the drama of the hajj, the most conspicuous figure and, in the sacred area of God, only a woman – a mother!

She took her nursing baby, according to the command of love, left her habitated town, house and her family and moved to these stern and rocky mountains, alone, without anything, without anyone.

Only with love.

She came as God had Commanded, laid her child on the bed of the valley, a dry, scorched, waterless valley, without plant – nothing. The valley of fear, loneliness, death!

Absolute trust.

O wonder! God so Commanded. God said, "I will guarantee you your child, your life, your future and your needs. O Hajar! Manifestation of submission and obedience! Great heroine of faith of love, of the trust of love, you are under My care."

Hajar, in submission and obedience, laid down her child in the middle of the valley.

As God Commanded and love so desired; then Hajar – the heroine of submission and contentment – hurriedly arose alone and began running in search of water, in the dry and burned out mountains surrounding Makkah; overwhelmed with the effort, movement, endeavor, aspiration, determination and self-reliance; upon her own feet; with her will, her thought; a woman, a mother, lonely; a migrant, responsible, struggling, searching, lover, faithful, bewildered, anguished; without support; without shelter; without a society; without a class; without a family or a race; homeless; without hope, yet hopeful; a captive, a stranger, a slave woman, without family; exiled by hatred; rejected by the aristocratic system; abased by people, race, class; and even rejected by her family; a black slave woman-with a child at her bosom, rejected from her home, town, country of the superior race; a wanderer in a strange desert; the prisoner of remote mountains and now, alone, diligently, tirelessly, unfamiliar with despair, determined, full of struggle, a migrant in the midst of the mountains.

Alone.

Running over the high peaks of soundless mountains!

In search of water.

The Prometheus of the culture of Abraham.

Not a god but a slave woman; not the seeker of fire, but of water.

Water? Yes. Water. Not a mysterious thing. Nothing supernatural. Not love, not submission. Neither surrender nor servitude, nor the water of life – no.

The water of the spirit? Spiritual water? Illumination? Heaven? No. No. No.

Drinking water!

Not what rains from the throne but that which gushes up from the earth.

Material materiality; the same liquid which flows over the ground and material life thirsts for. The body is in need of it. It transforms into blood in the body. It transforms into milk in the mother's breast. It is liquid in the mouth of a child.

Struggle in the search for water, a manifestation of the material life, the earthly life; an objective need; the link between humanity and the soil of the earth, the paradise of this earth, an earthly table.

A search; a material work; a material struggle; struggling and working for water, for bread, to quench your thirst, to satisfy the hunger of your child; to live well; a thirst is awaiting and you are responsible in this scorched desert to find a spring, water, a gift, yea.

A searching movement; a struggle with the soil over the earth in order to secure your needs from the bosom of nature and take water from the depths of stones.

A search, absolute material, need – material, deed – material goal – material.

Economy, nature, struggle!

It means need, material, human being.

Absolute intellectuality!

O wonder! It is only a few steps from the circumambulation to the search; a few moments and yet so much distance between.

The distance between two opposites; two contradictions:

Circumambulation: absolute love.

Search: absolute intellect.

Circumambulation: all Him.

Search: all you.

Circumambulation: Divine pre-determination and that is all.

Search: humanity's free will and that is all.

Circumambulation: a butterfly rotates around a candle and keeps on rotating round and round until it burns, turns into ashes and goes with the wind; it becomes nothing; it vanishes in love; it dies in light and is negated.

And search: an eagle flies over the peaks of hard and black mountains with the long wings of its will-power in search of food; it snatches its bait from the heart of rocks; heaven and earth are within its range; winds are the tamed of its flight; far horizons limit its sight; all space is a manifestation of its will-power; the expanse of the earth is under its wings; the hard, rocky mountains of the earth are weakened and submit to its two sharp, proud eyes.

Circumambulation is a human being enamoured of the Truth.

Search is mankind, the self-developed of reality.

Circumambulation is the exalted human being.

Search is the powerful human being.

Circumambulation is love, worship, spirit, beauty, sacrifice, martyrdom, ethics, goodness, value, spirituality, subjectivity, truth, faith, piety, mortification, humility, servitude, gnosticism, illumination, the heart, submission, Divine Will, meta, heaven, unseen, pre-determination, obedience, reliance, others, people, religion, the Hereafter, Resurrection and God ; that which enflames the eastern spirit.

And search: intellect, logic, need, life, reality, objectivity, earth, material, nature, prosperity, thought, science, industry, policy, profit, pleasure, civilization, economy, instinct, body, free-will, choice, domination, world, power, livelihood and self; that which causes western endeavor.

Circumambulation is God and nothing else.

Search is humanity and nothing more.

Circumambulation is the spirit and nothing else.

Search is the flesh and nothing more.

Circumambulation is the pain of existence, the anxiety of heaven.

Search is the pleasure of living, the tranquility of the earth.

The circumamtulation is to seek thirst.

The search is to seek water.

The circumambulation is as the butterfly.

The search is as the eagle.

And the hajj is the combination of opposites; the solution to the oppositions that have pre-occupied humanity throughout history; material vs. ideal; intellect vs. illumination; this world or the next; pleasure or piety; free will or decree and, finally, reliance upon God or the self.

The God of Abraham teaches you: 'both: a lesson given not with philosophy, gnosis, science or words but with an example, a human being.

This great lesson of God should be studied by all philosophers and gnostics in the world, in the countenance of this human being; all those who search for faith and truth; a countenance of a woman, a black Ethiopian woman, a female slave.

Hajar. A mother.

She submits herself absolutely to Him in accordance with love. She brings her child from the town, country, living place to this scorched, waterless, non-inhabited valley. She lays him on its bed.

Disregarding all accountings and reckonings, with absolute trust, solely with the power of faith, with reliance on love and Him and nothing else.

Circumamulating.

But she does not sit beside the child as a pious person awaiting a miracle; she does not wait for a hand to descend from the unseen world to do something or for a table to descend from heaven or for a brook to flow from Paradise or just trust to meet her need.

She leaves the child to love and immediately begins searching; she runs upon her self-determined feet and seeks with her able hands.

And now, amidst the dry, uninhabited mountains around Makkah, a human being, alone, thirsty, responsible; a stranger, a migrant in a fruitless search for water!

O joy! Are the words about Hajar? Or about a human being?

But her search ends in failure; she returns to her child in despair.

She sees, O joy! The child, left to love, being impatient in his thirst, has dug out the sandy ground with his feet; at the end of despair, in the final futile effort, in the moment no one could foresee, nobody could expect, suddenly, miraculously,

With the power of need and the Mercy of kindness,
A humming...
The sound of the footsteps of water,
Zamzam
The overflow of sweet, life-giving water from the depth

of stone!

And...the lesson!

Finding water through love, not through search,

But only after searching.

Reaching Him – not with just effort – O you who trust in love – endeavor as much as you can!

Struggle! O you who have relied on love! O you who have absolute faith, absolute trust!

Seven times – exactly as in the circumambulation!

But not in a circle, a circling effort for that is as an ass's milling effort; a futile rotation where, at the end, you reach the beginning; a hollow circle; that is, futility, absurdity, without content, without aim, like a zero; working to eat, eating to work and finally death.

Living not for the sake of living but for God.

Searching not for the sake of searching but for people.

Movement on a straight line, not a rambling one; a way and migration from a beginning to an end; from a point to a destination.

From a start to an extreme.

From Safa to Marwah.

Going and coming seven times; repetition in odd numbers, not even; your search will not end in Safa where you would arrive at where you began.

Seven times; it means perpetually, tirelessly, all your life until...reaching towards Marwah.

Is:

Beginning from Safa – 'sensing pure love towards others'.

Ending in Marwah – 'the end of humanness', that is, attaining manliness (*murawat*) and passing with magnamity over the abnormalities and defects of others.

Which others? Your fellow companions in your search? How, I do not know.

What I know is this:

Raise your head in love from the whirlpool of self-nonexistence; place your footprints upon those of Abraham and then, Hajar-like, O human being, lonely stranger, wanderer, exiled in the desert of the earth! O human being, responsible, thirsty and searcher for water in the mirage of life:

Ascend the hill of Safa; observe the white stream of wandering, struggling human beings; how restlessly and in thirst do they descend from the heights of Safa; hurry in search of water over the burned gravel of this desert; flow towards Marwah; ascend the high mountain of Marwah and find no water; return with empty hands, eyes full of anxiety, lips burning with thrist and again arrive at the dry rock of Safa and see that they have arrived at the same place from where they began; they hastily go and again arrive in Marwah, where they had been, and return to Safa, where they had been, and hastily go again...seven times, till eternity.

Finally, they find no water but reach Marwah.

And you, a drop, throw yourself from the heights of Safa into this white, wandering, struggling, thirst-quenching stream!

Drown yourself in them; descend and search along with the others.

At the halfway point, you are opposite the Ka'bah. Run in the harmony of others.

Taqsir and the End of Umrah

At the end of the seventh endeavor or search upon the heights of Marwah, remove your ihram; cut a piece of hair and put on the clothes of life; free yourself and depart from Mas'a' at Marwah; go towards your Isma'il alone, thirsty.

Listen! Do you not hear the humming of water in the distance?

Look! Thirsty birds are flying over this rocky place.

Zamzam has quenched Isma'il's thirst and a tribe from the remotest of places has filled the solitude of this valley.

The thirsty of the earth have come from the far horizons of the desert; they have erected tents around your Zamzam; a town grows from stone and a rain descends from revelation in this dry valley of despair; a house from liberation and love.

And you, O returned from the search, so thirsty and so lonely;

Your loneliness has ended;
Zamzam flourishes at the feet of Isma'il;
People have encircled you;
And what do you see?
God has made a House, wall to your wall;
Your skirt has become God's;
O exhausted by the search!
Lean on love.
O responsible human being!

Endeavor.
For your Isma'il is thirsty.
O you loving human being!
Desire!
Love will give you a miracle.
And for you, O pilgrim,

Who have returned from the search, from the thirsty desert of your being, from the depth of your solidified nature, a spring has opened.

Place your ear by the side of your heart ; press gently. You will hear it humming.

Go towards Zamzam.

From the rocky mountain of Marwah.

Drink from it; wash yourself in it; take from it; and take some to your land and offer it to your people.

PART TWO
THE GREATER HAJJ
Introduction

Hajj is a ritual in two phases. That which has passed was the umrah, the lesser hajj. After passing through it, you are free of the ihram and that which the ihram had forbidden until the 9th of Dhihajjah when the second phase begins:

***

It is the 9th day of Dhihajjeh. Now the hajj begins, the greater hajj. [1] Where are you? Wherever you are, in the Masjid al-Haram, beside the Ka'bah, alley, street, bazaar, hotel...

It is not important – the resolve is release; it is the beginning of a great journey; put on your ihram and leave Makkah!

O wonder! Now you must leave the Ka'bah; leave Makkah behind!

By the way, where is the qiblah?

It is the hajj and by leaving the Ka'bah, it begins!

Then what was your resolve from wherever you are towards the Ka'bah? What was taking off and arising to go to the Ka'bah? What was the journey which included the Ka'bah?

The lesser hajj, umrah!

And now the journey which is beginning? What is the journey from the Ka'bah, leaving Makkah?

The greater hajj!

To intend the Ka'bah is not the hajj; the goal of the hajj is not the Ka'bah; you had thought so at the beginning; this is erroneous; now learn that the hajj is not going to the Ka'bah; it is to depart from the Ka'bah. Now, experience it with your soul. Learn from the monotheism of Abraham that:

From the very beginning, the destination was not the Ka'bah!

Everything begins from beyond the Ka'bah; you attain the end of the boundary of self at the Ka'bah. O migrant who has resolved upon 'Him'; from the Ka'bah you will enter another land; you will take another way. The question is no longer about leaving the self and leaving your house. You left these things in miqat. Now one is leaving the House of God.

Now you who are in the highest heights, at the peak of servitude, have attained freedom and in the perfection of selflessness you attain 'self'; you have gained the worthiness to be told: 'Leave the Ka'bah!'

You yourself now are closer than the Ka'bah.

The pilgrimage to the Ka'bah has ended; the Ka'bah has brought you out from 'you-ness' to 'selflessness'.

You go until God!

No longer make the hajj to the house but make the hajj to the Lord of the House.

Here the question relates to orientation, not destination; the point is the direction of the Ka'bah, not the Ka'bah.

Wherever you stop you will remain, die! O haj! Resolver. Departer!

O perpetually moving towards Him.

O perpetually 'becoming' unto Him.[2]

O human being, Spirit of God.

O deed! A righteous deed.[3]

Have you come to Makkah?

Do not even stop in the Ka'bah! Nor stay in the sacred area.

The Ka'bah is the qiblah until you reach it so that you do not lose orientation, or be deceived by other qiblahs; in the Ka'bah, the orientation is elsewhere; resolve to go there; resolve to undertake a great journey, greater than the journey to the Ka'bah: the greater hajj!

This is why on this day of departure, wherever you are, put on your ihram and leave Makkah!

The greater hajj is to leave the qiblah behind.

What place is more honorable than the Ka'bah?

You go until you find it!

‘Arafat

You put on the ihram and leave Makkah for the East. Upon your return from ‘Arafat to the Ka‘bah you will stop in Mash‘ar and then in Mina.

Why?

Let’s go and see.

Go from the Ka‘bah to where? To the fartherest point, the end of the Way.

Do not stop along the way! Phase by phase, gradually, move upon the way all wayfarers have gone. First: the first station; second: the second station; third: the third station; rationally and logically; this is the monotonous, often repeated lessons of teachers, spiritual guides and professional admonishers; these are subjects of compositions, traditional disciplines, arrangements and reconcilitory transactions; throw all of these into the ihram of Makkah and escape in thirst and restlessness. O you lover, you are in motion beyond the Ka‘bah! One breath until eternity; do not stay in the middle of the way!

The ninth day, pause in‘Arafat. The night of the tenth, pause in Mash‘ar.

From the morning of the 10th until the 12th and optionally until the 13th, also, pause in Mina.

In the land of ‘Arafat, Mash‘ar and Mina, there is not a single sign to justify or explain the arrival and pause there; between ‘Arafat and Mina there is a straightaway of 25 kilometers which connects the valleys of Makkah.

This uninterrupted line has no particularities neither from the natural point of view nor from the historic point of view nor from the religious point of view; that which divides this way into three phases is an agreement, an assumed agreement for...regulating the phases of the hajj.

That which makes the issue more sensitive is that here the emphasis is upon 'pausing'; that is, in 'Arafat, your major duty is 'pausing'; in Mash'ar, your main duty is 'pausing'. In 'Arafat you have no basic task but 'pausing'; in Mash'ar, you collect seventy stones from the ground around you and only this; this cannot be the reason for pausing in Mash'ar and you must remain from night to sunrise there.

In Mina, also, the emphasis is upon 'pausing'. On the day of the 10th (the Day of the Festival), stoning and sacrifice, both major tasks which end by noon, but you must 'pause' there for three days.

What does 'pausing' mean? 'Pausing' is hesitating, the passing of a passer-by in passing, not 'remaining', not 'residing', not 'staying', but 'hesitating'.

It means you are 'upon the Way in movement'. Stop overnight in a place or a day and then move on. Also, you are only a wayfarer, a passenger, a pilgrim in these three residences; you have resolved upon a certain destination. Sometimes you stop with a caravan. When the signal to depart is given, the caravan decamps; you move with the caravan and leave the lodging for another.

It is an entrance, a pause and then a migration! The day in 'Arafat, night in Mash'ar and with the sunrise of the Festival (*'id*), in Mina.

And in Mina, a pause! Three days.

But Mina is not the final stop nor the destination.

Then when will the journey end?

Where is the final destination of this caravan?

Never.

Nowhere.

Then to what direction is it directed?

Towards God.

Until when, until where? Where is the final residence?

God is Absolute, Eternal.

Movement towards absolute beauty, absolute science, absolute power, absolute perfection.

An eternal, restless, infinite movement.

Towards God is the Way.

In this journey, God is not the lodging place but a direction. In us, everything changes, passes, is annihilated. Only direction is fixed. Only movement is infinite. *"All things perish except His Face."* (28:88)

We leave the Ka'bah and immediately go to 'Arafat and from 'Arafat, phase by phase, we return to the Ka'bah. *"We belong to God and unto God is the Return."*(2:156)

Everything relates to movement, an inherent movement (going); a transferred movement (returning); and everything is oriented to Him, not in Him!

This is why the hajj is absolute intention. This is why it is not a journey, for a journey has an end. It is not a pilgrimage to a shrine, for a devotee has a destination. It is hajj, absolute resolve, absolute purpose; resolve exists, but without a destination.

When you are in Mina, you are released and upon the return from 'Arafat, you do not reach the Ka'bah. You come close to the walls of Makkah.

For there is proximity but no attainment! Therefore the hajj is to go from the Ka'bah to 'Arafat and return from 'Arafat towards the Ka'bah until Mina.

In returning towards the Ka'bah, towards God, there are three phases – thus here we are not speaking about three lands – 'Arafat, Mash'ar and Mina are not three places. It is the secret of three phases. What led me to discover this secret was that I saw nothing in the land of these three stations.

Whatever exists, exists in the pauses of these three phases. We do not intend a deed, but rather a pause!

Therefore, it is not really three places but three pauses!

How can we come to know the meaning of these three phases?

God Himself has named them.

These Words descended from heaven.

'Arafat comes from the word meaning knowledge.

Mash'ar comes from the word meaning consciousness.

And Mina comes from the word meaning love, faith.

From the Ka'bah, suddenly in 'Arafat, *"Surely we belong to God..."*

From 'Arafat towards the Ka'bah, stage by stage, upon the return, *"and unto God is the Return."* (2:156)

Therefore, knowledge ('Arafat) is the beginning. It is the beginning of our birth in this world!

It is the story of Adam, the birth of human beings and the creation of mankind on earth after the Fall – the beginning of the life of mankind upon the earth – it was here at 'Arafat, for the first time that Adam and Even come to re-know each other.

'Arafah. 'Arafat!

The Fall? The exodus of Adam from the Garden of Paradise. This paradise is not the promised one. It is the garden of the earth, *jinnah*, it is the earth covered with greens and trees. It is the birthplace of the first human being who in that age when – far from responsibility and labor – ate, drank and enjoyed life; lived full and filled.

Until Iblis – the only one of God's angels who refused to fall prostrate before Adam, in whom God had inspired both evil and piety – began temptations. Iblis made him breach the limit, revolt against the prohibitions – eating the forbidden, namely, that which gives you a Divine quality: vision and immortality!

Adam refused it. It means that there is something other than the intellect operative in human beings. Iblis went to Eve. Love. This time Adam ate the forbidden.[4] All of a sudden, intellect and love shocked the angelic soul and turned him into the human being. The human being: this only angel who can commit sin and then repent, revolt, therefore, obey.

Revolt. It means a will before the Will of God. It means freedom before the forces of nature. It means selection, then responsibility. It means consciousness of self; consequently the conversion of the garden of fullness, being filled and lacking anguish to the indigent earth, thirst and pain, the Fall.

The beginning of life of an aware, responsible and rebellious creature, eternally condemned to suffer anguish and thirst; exiled; feeling strangeness and captivity in nature; the free bird of heaven in the cage of earth; and, then, the extinguishless anxiety of separation; the moaning reed flute upon the lips of religion, wisdom, gnosis, art and literature and...life; in anguish from being cut from the reedbed; the heavy and intolerable force of responsibility, anxiety for the rebellious soul; the instinctive anxiety of sin; the natural ardency for the return.

And now the hajj, the drama of creation, repentance!

Consciousness of self and the feeling of being away from home; exiled, strangeness and, as a result, intending to return!

The conversion of the heavenly Adam to the earthly Adam; realization of a human being in its present concept; the rebellious man; the destroyer of barriers; a weakening before Iblis; easily influenced by Eve; expelled from heaven; being left to himself by God; exiled upon the earth; a prisoner of nature; all of these just for eating the forbidden which brought him rebellious wisdom, consciousness of self and a special insight unto God: It opened his eyes and he recognized his nakedness and himself.

The Fall from the Ka'bah (House of God) in knowledge ('Arafat)!

The appearance of the birth of the human being on earth.

The appearance of the human being at the time of the appearance of knowledge; the beginning of knowledge with the realization of one another; and the first spark of love!

The encounter of Adam and Eve.

When Adam re-knew his wife, his own kind and encountered the opposite sex who enjoyed the same nature as he. There, the human being, as an essence, with philosophical insight; its beginning — the appearance of knowledge.

And here, the human being, with a scientific perspective as an objective creature whose beginning in history -- the appearance of knowledge; and in the hajj, the first move from knowledge ('Arafat)! It is because of this that the pause in 'Arafat is during the day. It begins at noon of the

9th day when the sun is at its peak.

The beginning of consciousness, vision, liberty from the captivity of nature, familiarization, link of affection, the knowledge of nature and man, under the clear light of the sun.

With the sun setting, the pause in 'Arafat (knowledge) ends. It is impossible to see in darkness. There is no possibility of familiarity or vision – no sight exists.

The sun sets in the plain of 'Arafat; the human being, accompanied by the sun, migrates towards the West.

Movement at night.

Pause in Mash'ar, the land of consciousness and consciousness of self.

The phase after knowledge, consciousness.

And how surprising!

First knowledge, then consciousness.

Everyone thinks consciousness comes first in order to lead to knowledge and understanding.

But the Creator of knowledge and consciousness says the opposite; from the encounter – the encounter of two opposites, the collision of two thoughts, conjunction and birth of the first collision and understanding; the end of individual living, the beginning of the first society, family, the appearance of the love of consciousness of self. However, from the union of two beings appeared knowledge and with that, human beings on the earth, then the transformative course of knowledge led to consciousness. Science increased the power of understanding; and consciousness gave birth to consciousness of the self!

The external world is the base for subjectivity. The intellect grows from the relationship of the mind in contact with the realities of the external world. Comprehension and perception gain strength and then the spiritual powers of a human being blossom.

If first there is consciousness (Mash'ar), then knowledge ('Arafat), it is imaginary idealism.

If first there is love, faith (Mina), then it becomes gnosis, a way which lacks consciousness (Mash'ar) and knowledge ('Arafat).

Knowledge ('Arafat) without consciousness (Mash'ar) and love (Mina) is materialism; scientism without God; without consciousness of self; science left over in phenomena; absurd life, spiritless civilization, ideal-less progress.

Consciousness (Mash'ar) and love (Mina) without knowldge ('Arafat) is religion as everyone understands it. But in this religion, mankind is an earthly phenomenon of most interfior material yet in movement with the power of the Divine Trust which begins with knowledge; the understanding of the realities of the universe – materialistic view; and from that station it reaches human consciousness of self. This consciousness, the station between 'Arafat and Mina, is born of knowledge and gives birth to love; and from that base, jumps over the highest peak of ascent, the final phase of perfection, ascension to heaven, until, "*The Lote-Tree of the Boundary,*" (53:14), until God! Love (Mina).

Realism! Yea. Not as a goal, but as a principle; a base for the flight towards the ideal and beyond.

An idealism with a materialistic foundation. The human being in this school of thought is a contradiction, a combination of oppositions. Half of the earth, a bad smelling clay, sedimentary and petrified layer of a flood and within, the Spirit of God. And you? A deed, a freedom, a choice, a migrator from a muddy marsh to the Spirit of God; in this journey, you pass three phases, these places of pause:

knowledge, consciousness and love ('Arafat, Mash'ar and Mina).

And now we see so clearly and precisely how everything comes to light. Now simple and good. Religion? A way. Wisdom? Consciousness. The Divine Mission? Guidance. Ummah? A group in movement. Imamate? Showing the way and leadership. Imam? The teacher of the Way, guiding signs, martyr, witness, example, leader. Worship? Smoothing and leveling the Way. Devotion and mortification of the soul? Revolutionary self-development of a responsible person to desert anything that invites you to itself, causes you to remain and weighs you down. 'The Way of God'? A way that begins for God by deserting the self and sacrificing your world for the people. Prayer? The desire to call unto Him by expressing and offering our needs, requests, loves and disgusts to God having convinced the self and people. Remembrance? Reminding and forgetting not. The hajj? Resolving.

And even the solution to all oppositions and contradictions that we imagine? Wealth – good, a virtue, the Grace of God, the world and calamity, as well. That is, upon this Way, all things must be weighed, evaluated. If the ritual prayer prevents one from going, then , *"Woe to the praying ones..."* (107:4) If money is used upon the Way, then the Prophet also liked the liking of money.

Now we have arrived in 'Arafat. The fartherest distance we will be from the Ka'bah on this journey; a dry plain, swelling from the soft sands of the seaside; located in the center, a small, rocky hill, the Mount of Rahman which the Prophet used as a pulpit on his last pilgrimage to give a message to the people.

An astonishing town, growing in a single day from the sands and dismantled at the time of evening ritual prayers; a complete town of nations without a government; a community of human races, colorless; a combination of all countries of the world, no frontiers; the whole earth upon a plain, the rows of white tents streched from horizon to horizon. Discriminations! How few. Aristocricies showing themselves occasionally: How inferior. Aristocratic beauties: How ugly! And you ask what remains here that I have come for the pilgrimage? What action should I be performing? None. You are free. Float in the endless sea of humanity. Spend the day as you wish, even in sleep.

Let yourself feel you are in 'Arafat! Yet there is nothing to see here. As Andre Gide said, "Glory should be in the eyes of the beholder and not in what you look at."

There is no obligation here. That which you must do is greater than anything which can be shaped within the word 'obligation'.

Contemplation.

Take the bud of your primordial nature so it blooms under the clear sun of 'Arafat. And as to the habit nurtured by history, do not escape from the light and freedom.

O shadow nourished by oppression, secluded in ignorance, moss of the deep, calm swamps! O 'me'! Leave your tent. Lose yourself in the depths of the ocean of people. Let the fiery sun of 'Arafat burn you.

Melt one day...O wax!

Luminous in the heart of the group yet not pliable in the hand of the enemy or a tame plaything in the hands of an actor!

However, you are free this day to do as you like. Spend it in sleep like always. All that has been asked of you is to 'pause'!

Mash'ar

The sun of 'Arafat leaves; so leave 'Arafat as well because knowledge also leaves. Knowledge cannot tolerate the night. The night swallows, kills and effaces it.

Do not spend the night in knowledge ('Arafat).

Depart when the sun sets as people have resolved to depart. No Muslim can be found on the way to it when night falls. No The city of the sun suddenly disappears in the ambiguity of the sunset as it abruptly escapes from the plain.

To where?

To consciousness (Mash'ar).

You are not free to rest; at every stopping place, a hesitation and immediate departure.

Stop? Never. Stay? Nowhere.

Pause. Half a day, a night and two or three days, that is all.

Tents erected yesterday are dismantled today.

They are talking to you.

With you. O...'me'.

O you who are only a pause upon the earth and nothing more!

O you who are a short moment from the eternity of time and nothing more!

O nothing!

O wave! You whose comfort is your non-being. O who only exists in motion! O who becomes everything in resolving upon Absolute!

O ...nothing.

O a drop.

Join the roaring stream of people! Flow!

"It is no fault in you that you should seek bounty from your Lord (in trade during the pilgrimage); but when you press on from 'Arafat, then remember God at the Sacred Waymark (Mash'ar al-Haram) and remember Him as he has guided you though formerly you were gone astray." (2: 198)

Be in Mash'ar by nightfall, a valley stretching from 'Arafat towards Mina and Makkah. The closer it gets, the more narrow it becomes. People are more pressed into it.

Suddenly the storm of sunset agitates 'Arafat. It dismantles the one-day-town. The roaring flood of humanity – one color, one spirit, like a whirlpool around Mount Rahmah, turn like a mill, a rotating whirlpool, anxious and worried from fear of the night, pour down the narrow valleys and like a roaring stream at night, the white flood of the masses leave the night, for night has occupied 'Arafat's valley.

And you are a point in this line of the Way;

A drop like other drops.

O you who flow! O flood!

O endeavor and roar at night!

Faith and hope in darkness. Wonder! It seems as if the city of the sun melted under the fire of 'Arafat; now the city of sleep flows like lava on the valley bed.

All have become lost in each other.

Everyone is drowned in the night and the multitude.

But what is there to fear? The road is safe and secure.

Finding 'self' and missing the way is tragic.

But losing 'self' upon the way is salvation.

Above all this, making your 'self' the way is worship.

For worship means: O rough, rocky place, an infected marsh! O the highest peak of pride and the lowness of abjection! Grind your 'self' to become a smooth way under the feet of God's Will so that it can flow over you softly and gently and flow within you as in the essence of life and the primordial nature of the world.

O you who God awaits at the end of the Way!

Now we have arrived in Mash'ar, the name of a place, the place of consciousness!

Observe the vigilance.

In 'Arafat knowledge was collective; in Mash'ar, consciousness is singular. This means that realities are varied and great in number but the truth is one and its way, one!

The way of people who move towards God!

And the Prophet, seated upon the earth, amongst his Companions, traced several lines with his staff upon the ground. He was unrestrained because knowledge is found in understanding reality. It is a knowledge of that which is. Knowledge ('Arafat) is a mirror which reflects patterns, colors, designs and conditions as they are. Knowledge is a mirror before the world. Its name: science.

That is all.

It has no good or bad; to serve or commit treason are not pertinent to it, ritual purity or impurity has no meaning in it; it is a science and only a science, everywhere and always, it is one. Kafir or Muslim, the people or the enemy, traitor or servant.

These limitations appear with consciousness; a power which employs science, gives direction, creates debauchery or piety, war or peace, cruelty or justice.

In a capitalistic system, knowledge is the same as that of an equitable system. A Nazi physicist recognizes nature the same way as the Nazi's physicist victims do. The 'ulama of the Caliph know religion in the same way as the 'ulama who are captive of the Caliph.

What makes one an executioner and another a martyr? One a freedom seeker and the other a tyrant? One ritually pure and the other ritually impure? It is not knowledge and science; it is consciousness.

Which science? It makes no difference as science is one. Which kind of knowledge? The question is useless as knowledge takes only one form.

But which consciousness? This question must be answered and the hajj answers it!

'Sacred consciousness'.

That which is preserved in an environment of chastity, piety, and purity.

It is because of this that the first phase was only knowledge ('Arafat) but here it is not only consciousness (Mash'-ar) but sacred consciousness (Mash'ar al-Haram).

It is strange! The pause in sacred consciousness takes place at night.

And pause in knowledge ('Arafat) during the day. Why?

Knowledge ('Arafat) is a phase of science, the recognition of an objective relationship; an inner connection to an outer reality which requires sight and light but consciousness is a phase of consciousness of self which is the power of understanding and this is a subjective thing. The former is the sensation phase and objective witnessing: *nazar;* and here is the phase of thinking, inner consciousness, *basirat.*[5]

But not irresponsible, polluted and sick thought, reckless consciousness, but a responsible consciousness, committed to an environment of purity and virtue. In the sacred area of holiness and security of faith, sacred consciousness (Mash'ar al-Haram), like the sacred mosque (Masjid al-Haram), the sacred month (Dhihajjah), the sacred area (Makkah) where sin and corruption are forbidden; aggression, fighting or harming living creatures, uprooting plants are forbidden; earth and time are sacred, secure, reverent and chaste. Within a barrier of piety, devoted to peace and goodness – pure, having been purified by the Spirit – luminous with the light of primordial nature!

O wonder: A consciousness born from knowledge gives birth to love, close neighbor, wall to wall with science and faith, between knowledge ('Arafat) and love (Mina) and after knowledge ('Arafat) and before love (Mina).

It is because of this that consciousness itself is luminous. It is an illuminated flame, lit by the oil of thought which lights the lantern of the heart.

Wisdom is consciousness of self brought by the Prophets and bestowed upon humanity. It is this, neither philosophy nor science; this is that very knowledge which Islam speaks about. It is a knowledge which does not produce scholars but rather thinkers – with consciousness of self; it is not a subjective view of phenomena or methods. It is light and illumination, a light not outer, but inner. This is that knowledge which the Prophets of humanity called the 'light which God places in the hearts of those He wishes'. 'Knowledge of the Way; knowledge of guidance; everyone can learn knowledge but it is the knowledge of consciousness which is a light which God projects in the heart of anyone whom He desires. Whom He desires? One who endeavors and struggles for God and not for the self. "*As for those who strive in Us, We surely guide them to Our Path.*" (29:69) Knowledge of the Way. Guidance. A saving consciousness of self, the light of salvation, a special consciousness whereby a person from among the people (ummi) becomes the leader, the torch-bearer of the Way. This knowledge requires no literacy. It is not found in a classroom, book or notebook. It is not taught in religious centers or universities. Its center of learning is jihad; its students are the mujahid from among people; the seekers of the Way to God. This knowledge needs not a lamp nor the smoke of a lamp. It is itself the essence of illumination. Light.

With it, one can see, clearly see, even if it be night, but the night of consciousness, sacred consciousness!

What matter that it is night and darkened space? Are you not upon the Way? Are you not amidst the multitude? With the caravan? A flowing drop in the midst of the white stream of people where the command is:

"*Then press on from where the people press on and pray for God's Forgiveness.*" (2:199)

Gush forth and flow from where the people gush and flow. Flow into the groups of people, drowned among the people!

What wonder!

Seek out arms at night in the land of consciousness.

For if it were not night, what should one gather arms for?

Why awaiting the morning?

And why the jihad of tomorrow?

Consciousness. Mash'ar.

A pause to deliberate, plan, prepare the spirit, gather the arms; mobilization in a land which borders the battlefield.

At a time which joins with the day of battle.

And all of this is the pious dissimulation of night, in hidden ambush, on the border of Mina, during an oppressive rule!

The gathering of arms in the darkness of night, but in the light of consciousness.

Sacred consciousness with the acquired recognition in the light of knowledge.

A night in anticipation; in anticipation of morning; a morning of light; a victory and love in Mina.

***

The army, roaring and dishevelled, reaches Mash'ar; hurriedly collects the stones upon the way, from among the rocky mountains and then.

Tranquility.

Contemplation.

In this desert Gathering Place for the Day of Judgment, Resurrection, *mahshar*. No. O God. 'Sacred Consciousness'. There are no tents, signs, walls, doors, ceiling, street lamps or rampart. Do not attempt to recognize anyone or find your caravan. It is useless. Everyone is alone in Mash'ar, that is all. Two. Everyone with the night, incredibly filled with people.

Crowds and flocks jammed together, incredible.

The Gathering! *"The day on which a man shall fly from his brother and his mother and his father and his spouse and his son."* (80:35)

Now, from non-self you have attained self and in negating 'self', proved it.

Your tore off the 'self' in your own miqat with the ihram, you joined the multitude.

You left your 'self' in the whirlpool of the circumambulation; you discovered 'self' in the endeavor of searching; you gave your 'self' to the flood in 'Arafat and now take it back in Mash'ar.

Everyone is alone in this huge crowd.

O you who achieve 'self', become 'self'! That 'self' which is now truth, the non-false 'me'.

Without clothes, without form, no longer adornment, nor color, nor mere mask, nor margins; you who have become a pure content from head to toe. O you who are unmasked! O you who are you!

Retire with the Friend tonight.

Now admit to the 'self' which you negated: 'to free the 'self' is to admit to the selfhood of 'self'; with unreservedness, with bluntness, with frankness.'' Do you know what ardency this is?

Now the time has arrived for you to destroy the barrier, tear the curtain, release the life-long prisoner in your covered dungeon for there is you and only you.

You joined the multitude alone! Now amidst the crowd, you reach aloneness. How precious is the individuality which you discover in the multitude; a pearl you search out by diving deep into the ocean; shoulder to shoulder with people but alone. How glorious it is! "Be with the people, yet be not with the people."

Here is Muzdalifah, a pressurizer, a compacter.

A narrow passage, its embrace tightened, presses the army in its arms.

Millions of people scattered in a frontierless, limitless desert; not everyone in a place, far from others, not in a town, all wall, wall, wall. Everybody in the cage of a room, the barrier of a house without others, covered, silent, locked in self but in a narrow passage, all pressed together, side by side. All have crept together.

With all of this – everyone – the self – alone with this sky, with this world.

It appears that in the absolute sovereignity of the multitude, one becomes more alone.

No one has anything to do with the other. Fear not. Night embraces you with modesty.

No look calls you to that which you were and are; free yourself in the night.

What am I saying? In Mash'ar only the land is covered by night; the sky of Mash'ar is the royal court of God, this silent and moon-lit palm groove. Take the bloody and restless fist of your heart and place it under the shower of its unseen silence. Like the butterflies of ardency, set free your captive eyes in this green field; sense the strangeness of this painless desert in which you are condemned to live in the depths of your primordial nature; hear the voice of God in the mysterious silence, the painful moaning of that great prisoner of the earth, the rightful Imam of humanity ('Ali) who, beside this despicable city of life and in the heart of this soundless, earthly desert, puts his head at the edge of the well and cries.

The night of Mash'ar arrives with mysterious and magnificent glory and when faced by it, existence closes its lips and becomes tranquil.

Suddenly, an invading flood hits itself against the valley of Mash'ar; pressed and full of commotion, it runs over the bed of the valley and gradually sits down in the narrow embrace of Mash'ar, upon the skirts of the surrounding hills and mountains; then Mash'ar becomes silent again under its endless ceiling.

The night of Mash'ar has begun. In Mash'ar, there is no lamp; night is illuminated with moonlight and with the large, shining rain drops of stars, the lamps of heaven!

The night of Mash'ar; this beautiful, heavenly creature unrecognized by those who search for a loaf in the earth; city and life-alienated people who have spent all of their lives with their heads thrust into the earth; that which they recognize is another night; the night of Mash'ar is indescribable.

The night of Mash'ar is a shadow of the imagination-nurturing, heart-warming nights of paradise. Its moonlight is cold, open and affectionate. It is the caressing smile of God and it is in its countenance that your heart bears witness to the oath of God to moon and moonlight.

The moonlight of towns with heavy smoke; habitations mixed with heavy dust; the steam of breaths, which are damp, dirty, dusty; and stars, yellow and sick.

It is the night of the 10th of Dhihajjeh and the great army of monotheism – these 'worshipping mujahids', 'armed gnostics' – have become silent in this mountainous camp, drowned in their loving longings. They have drifted into the observations of the sky of Mash'ar; they are occupied with observing and drowned in this suspended, green sea over which diamond-winged birds of the stars appear one by one from the unseen upon the ceiling of the black night of the earth, opening holes towards another world.

The moon with its glittering light which is the only caressing smile that nature shines on the countenances of 'the wretched of the earth', pours light from the top of the mountain into the valley of Mash'ar; diamond flowers bloom; the invisible hand of an angel brings the beautiful lantern of the pleiades from a corner of the sky and hangs it upon the ceiling of Mash'ar; then appears the clear and mysterious road as if it links directly to eternity, the Milky Way of 'Ali and the road to Makkah.

What does this mean? It is the road that 'Ali takes to Makkah; the multiple meanings interpreted by the masses at which scholars – those who stay in knowledge – laugh at for these truths are covered by myths which are more profound and more precious than history and their only crime is not to have found reality; historians – who only understand events as virtues because they happened or have remains – who do not realize what truths they have abandoned; who are amused with absurd superstitions, dirty abominations and detested lies, who waste their life and their knowledge.

This is why it is said Prometheus is a lie and Ayaz, the bearded and moustached lover of Sultan Mahmud is true.

Look at the sky of Mash'ar.

Whenever despicable satans try to deceive by hiding oppression, tearing apart a bit of the night and visiting the pure sanctuary of heaven, the arrows of the guardian angels of the heavenly world of God, who are the holders of the curtain and keepers of the veiled sacred sanctuary of the heavens, shoot them down with meteorites as arrows of light which occasionally sink into the black life of night, driving them towards the desert of the earth so that the secret of His great chastity may not fall into the skulls of these despicable minds and they not hear and not understand with their deceit for the exalted sacred region should be spoiled by no satanic steps in the sacredness of the beauty and splendor of solitude and no forbidden person should be shown the way.

And you, O side by side with the people! Lost in the multitude even though in solitude of self with God. O you who are an armed gnostic! O devotee of the night of Mash'ar tonight and lion of the day of Mina tomorrow! What do you carry with yourself tonight in this army which awaits the morning of jihad? Have you erected camp in the station of consciousness? Do you wear the dress of death with arms of war in hand and nothing else? Make your weapons the place of your refuge tonight. Keep them under your head in solitude with God. It is you and He, with your arms and your faith and nothing else in this pure and free aloneness. Ascend through the ceiling of creation for a few hours, through the opening of the stars of Mash'ar. Fly in the heavenly sphere. Set yourself free from the narrow enclosure of 'being' and inferior world of 'living'. O follower of Muhammad! Make the journey. Ascend to heaven. Kindle love in the crucible of your nature. Burn the weaknesses, fears, concerns and complexes which life has poured into you. Develop, cherish and prepare self for the morrow, tonight. O liberated servant! You who are a lover, a mujahid! You theist seeker of justice! Satan (the *khanas*) is awaiting in the battlefield of Mina; satans prevail over the land of faith. Prepare and ready self for the morrow, tonight. A horrible war will take place at dawn. Fill your hands tonight with bullets and consciousness of self in the station of consciousness and arms; fill your heart with love through prayer.

You ask what relics exist here that we have come to visit as pilgrims and what action is to be taken here?

None. You are free. Float in this deep sea of humanity.

Spend the night as you like, even in sleep.

But feel you are in Mash'ar.

There is nothing to see here. Endeavor to keep the glory in your glance.

There is no duty here. That which exists is greater than the framework of duty could contain.

Contemplation.

Night spreads its tent over the hundreds of thousands of nameless and signless human beings upon the earth; observe the sky covered with tiny stars.

Place your thirst under the sky of Mash'ar; let the mysterious rains of inspiration quench it; the silence of Mash'ar overwhelms in this tumultous resurrection. You clearly hear the voice of silence.

Nothing exists in this space to narrow the place of God in your mind; the space is overflowing with God.

You smell His Essence as clearly and simply as the aroma of a flower.

You see His presence with your eyes and hear in the depth of your soul and marrow. What am I saying? You feel Him in your soul like a caress, like love.

Mash'ar has the countenance of Islam; it is similar to 'Ali: A heart swollen with waves of love and a hand upon the sword; everybody trains to be a Muslim in Mash'ar.

Devotee of the night, lion of the day.

Take the night of Mash'ar to dawn in the deliberation and the search for self.

Fly in the heavens of Mash'ar. Ascend with the spirit in your search for God.

Search the ground of Mash'ar in mobilization of jihad, in search of arms; it is an astonishing sight.

The roaring flood of migrants who arrive from 'Arafat abruptly scatter upon the hillsides like an army. They hurriedly disembark from their vehicles while still moving and hastily climb the mountains in search of arms.

It is the army of monotheism. Hierarchy plays no role. It exists but not in relation to individuals so much as in relation to the individual and God.

There is no rank; there is and yet not upon name and title; but upon primordial nature; in self and in relation to self. Today's self, your tomorrow's self and the self of your every moment.

It is the army of monotheism.

Abraham issues the commands!

Struggle to gather arms at night. Move through the mountains, everyone together. Everyone is responsible for self, yet accompanying each other.

The next station is Mina. It is the place of combat. The day after is the day of sacrifice and time for combat. The war begins tomorrow. Thus everyone must be armed tonight. Combat takes place in the light of day but arms are collected during the darkness of night.

It is an astonishing scene. It is a great night. Greater than great. Time understands not such a night. But no. It understands it well.

The stormy and tumultous sea of people think of combat and gather arms. Hundreds of thousands of mysterious spirits, all brothers, sisters, fellow thinkers, fellow warriors, everybody knows the other well. Nobody, neither brother nor sister nor husband nor wife nor mother or father nor friend or enemy see or recognize each other. Everybody thinks about his own deed in the darkness of Mash'ar; stoops down upon the earth; reaches among the stones; fingers and feels the stones searching for pebbles to shoot in Mina.

What kind of pebbles? Pebbles , but not just any kind of pebbles. Be careful. It is dark and they are difficult to find. But they must be found; they must rightly be found, look-ed for, and precisely searched out. Each should be evaluated; each has criteria, order; everyone should execute accurate orders, discipline, unity, order, harmony, obeying the command, responsibility.

The story is very serious.

The pebbles you collect are your arms; they are your arms to fight the enemy.

It has so been ordered and you know what kind of pebbles to collect.

Smooth, polished, round, smaller than a walnut and larger than a pistachio.

What does it mean? It means: bullet.

Everything is reckoned, precise and with foresight; the day after every soldier of Abraham's army must aim seventy bullets towards the sensitive parts of the enemy in Mina: Head and breast, brain and heart. Any bullet shot which misses does not count or which hits the stomach and foot and not a sensitive place does not count. Foresee that your aim might be bad. Select more pebbles. Cover up for your lack of skill by providing more power. At any rate, you should not run short in the battle scene. If you miss a single shot, you are not a soldier; you have not participated in the hajj.

Here the word is military discipline.

Do not forget you must pause three days in Mina: the 10th, 11th and 12th; the 1st day is the attack against the last idol; idol, statue , with seven shots.

Any shot taken does not count; only those which hit the mark; these are military acts, reality is the criterion and action, an external effect, an objective result.

Here is the land of action. There is no monastery here. It is a scene of battle.

Orders are precise, decisive, inevitable and are as clear as two times two is four.

It does not have patience for Sufic, philosophical, ascetic justifications and interpretations. It is not the work of prayer, recourse and intercession, complaining, supplication, vowing, religious bribery, deceitful deceits and tricks and jurisprudential, philosophical and reckless imaginings of Sufis. It is absoltue obedience, action and affect. It must be carried out in the minutest of details. Obedience here is unquestioned. There is no alternative. Nothing can replace it. No one can forgive your shortcomings. No one can bring pardon for you.

Forget not that in this mountainous region, no one is an authority. If Abraham or Muhammad missed a shot or have shōt one less, they are responsible and have not performed the hajj.

If you err, you must pay the penalty. There is no other way; deceivers of the Divine Law are all bare-headed here.

The first day, attack with seven shots.

On the second and third, three attacks per day and in every one afterwards, again seven. This is forty-nine to here.

On the fourth day, you are free. You can either stay or go from Mina. If you stay, you must fight like two days before. In Mina, there is no day of peace and rest from war. If that is so, your total shots become seventy.

After supplying yourself with arms and easing up on the duty of jihad, the military spirit ends. Talk of war, steel, bullets, discipline, roughness, dry military view, and performance of questionable orders immediately gives way to spiritual gnosticism and there comes serenity, peace, sincerity of heart, loving deliberations and ascension of the spirit.

The roar of the lion suddenly deforms into a painful moan. The uproar of shots gives place to silent words which shine through the absorbed eyes of heaven. In the depth of the night, conversing with God.

It is an astonishing scene.

This is not a mechanical society. It is a revolutionary ummah. The knowledgeable, those who practice, the politicians, the devotees, the worldly, the religious and...are artificial borders for artificial, defective people but the ummah is a revolutionary society, a society not based on a series of class hierarchies; it is a society upon the way, a moving caravan, with One God, one way, one qiblah and all form one tribe, children of one father and servants of One God; **its intellectuals fight, its fighters worship and its worshippers think.**

And now, in this scene which displays this ummah, armed mujahids have taken on a state of gnostic worshippers just as before in 'Arafat they had the visage of awakened intellectuals.

The night of consciousness sees that Mash'ar, all at once, takes on the rage and roar of a frightening army which is striving for a great conspiracy in the refuge of the mysterious night, at the border of the frontier of tomorrow; then it becomes like a calm and limpid sea which makes peace with the night under the radiation of the moonlight and the rain of stars; it becomes the place of descent of the angels of beauty and the Mercy of God; drowned in ponderous wonder, it takes on such a peaceful silence that it seems as if a bird has alighted upon its head; a silence in which the sounds of the drops of the tears of the beloved can be heard and other than the throbbing of the hearts of lovers – for each of whom there is a story – no sound disturbs the subtle, quiet of Mash'ar.

Mash'ar, a mountainous camp for the only army in the world in which every soldier is a commander; but instead of the thoughtless intoxication and the brawling of pride on the night of battle – a battle that right now calls the victory of tomorrow, 'the night of the Festival' -- instead of that, the whisperings of love; the rapture of humility; the silence of wonderment before the uneasiness of destiny and allurements; the ardency at the threshold of eternity; the anxious thirst of the heart to attain *ithar* , self-sacrifice, through devotions under the rain of revelation and purification of the 'self' and to nourish and feed the spirit with prayer because one becomes uneasy for death in tomorrow's battle like Jacob in separation from Joseph; one awaits the reward of one's merit in battle, to receive the high rank of martyrdom from the Hands of the Great Commander because lives are in His Hands.

O wonder! Mash'ar! Arms in hand and prayer on lips, awaiting the morning of battle.

Morning approaches.

The dawn's breeze raises a mysterious commotion in the area.

Suddenly, harmonious cries of the Call to Ritual Prayer open wings from every side, mingle in each other, widespread and freely opening the way as if they hit the shore of existence from every side and return to Mash'ar.

Hundreds of thousands of figures in the ambiguity of dawn, break and fold down in ruku' and sajdah.

The breeze of the Call to Ritual Prayer melodiously creating waves, blows smoothly over the white sown field of monotheism – the glorious unity which no ceiling or roof can contain.

Now is the time for the morning ritual prayer, the everlasting ritual prayer.

And here, it is unique.

The Call to Ritual Prayer becomes silent and Mash'ar sleeps for an hour.

Night escapes from 'Arafat, descends from the heights of the mountains, passes over those asleep in Mash'ar, pours into the valley of Mina and flees; morning brightness in its pursuance.

Mina

The longest pause, the last pause, the final station! That is: wish, goal, ideal and *mina, maniyat, amani, tamana,* (willingness, aspiration, trusteeship, imploring) love! The last phase after the phase of knowledge and consciousness.

What Dante imagined to be two phases: imitating the most sublime ascension of consciousness and gnosticism of the East, the philosophy of illumination:

Wisdom of Virgil and love of Beatrice
In the Divine Comedy.

But in the hajj – this great drama of Divinity – there are three phases.

Knowledge, sacred consciousness and love.

Now it is the great beginning; the hajj nears its highest peak.

Today is the 10th of Dhihajjah. It is the day of the ‘id (Festival) , the ‘id of Sacrifice.

Morning pours into the narrow valley of Mash‘ar and brings Muslims to their feet with its invitation of light.

From the bed of the valley, from the base of the mountains, from the crevices, major and minor routes, large and small streams of the ranks of the mujahids, little by little, flow, link together and create a great stream, the narrow valley, narrower, the stream, more compressed and stronger.

The pause in Mash‘ar ends. It is again time to migrate, pull up the roots of the heart from this station and move towards another.

The white army of monotheism has started to move. It has spent the night collecting arms, talking to God, anticipating the morning of battle! The devotees of Mash'ar now, the lions of Mina!

Their hearts overwhelmed with flames, overflowing with rage, their minds filled with ardency and saturated with love, *"Firm of heart against the unbelievers...compassionate among themselves."* (48:29); they have resolved on Mina.

The land of God and Iblis .

Mash'ar is beginning to move. It moves towards the West; the most beautiful station lies ahead; the morning's smile, the morning of the Festival is causing everyone to be restless.

The army arrives at the valley of Muhassar, a valley of hardships, containing difficult, narrow passages; the command for the attack arrives encompassing the battlefield. Run. Steps, short and quick! The flood more compressed and more restless. It is close to the battlefield, to the hard and stony valley, to the narrow passage way and the command to hasten! The army which still carries with itself the serenity of night, the pause and inner deliberations, quickly becomes agile, attacks and hastens towards Mina.

Suddenly the roaring and attacking stream hits a great impenetrable obstacle.

It retreats and ultimately is halted. Not even one step can be taken forward; it is only at the end of the army that a weak movement can be seen;

What has happened?

What obstacle in this world has the power to suddenly halt such a roaring stream in its place?

What command can issue such an efficient and decisive halt?

Who issued the command to halt?

The sunrise!

It issues the command to attack.

The army has arrived at Mina's frontier.

The front of this long, undisciplined and shapeless rank which appeared from the compressed swarming of millions of free soldiers and volunteer warriors who take no orders from anyone in the world is cut, with one sharp blade, and all stand on an imaginary line in army discipline. No one from the roaring, disorderly army dares to step forward; an invisible wall separates Mash'ar from Mina. No power in the world can destroy this steel wall, not even Abraham, not even Muhammad, because it is not an agreement . It is not a law. It is a Tradition from among those which exists in nature. It has been founded by He Who Founded knowledge, Who Founded the rules of nature, Who Founded the system which rules over the universe and no change, no conversion can be found in His Tradition.

The command of the sun, like the forces of gravity and the order of life and death!

Here it is only morning that rules. Its subtle fingertips have the ability to suddenly remove the impenetrable obstacle in the way of this aggressive flood; let morning rise! Like a shadow which is sucked by the laughter of the light, this unconquerable wall — which so nails this powerful flood in place — is effaced with a smile!

Behind this invisible wall, restlessly stands the armed aggressors in disciplinary lines, in anticipation of the sun's command.

The vanguard of its rise has driven the night from everywhere but still moments are left before it appears on the rooftop of the East.

No where in the world, in no phase of time, over no ummah in the world, does such a sovereignity rule like the morning.

Melancholy struck people who, restless for love and battle, stand behind the gates of Mina, all their body an eye, looking towards the way of the sun until it arises behind the gateway.

Millions of eyes and hearts await the command of light in an enflamed silence, some being so restless and in need, hear a command before it is issued.

Why?

It is a command. This army is all of the power of monotheism upon the earth, the sole army in the world, in history, that takes its command from the sun.

The only ummah who have accepted the sovereignity of morning.

An ummah who alone accept the sovereignity of morning.

Morning arises from 'Arafat and breathes behind the mountains; the red aurora has split the black tent of 'enveloping darkness' up to its neck and has sprinkled the blood of martyrs of tyranny and the sacrifices of multitheism over the countenance of the 'id of Sacrifice; the army of monotheism calls for vengeance at the threshold of an uprising against the bases of history's three rebels - *taghut* – against God. The moments are moments full of glory and excitement. The sun and its luminosity, the aurora and its red incisive blade, morning and the pulsations of its breath...have made everyone restless; this sacred sign of God comes today with hand and lap full of the Promise and a caress, hope and faith, the command for battle and the glad tidings of victory; comes to issue the command of attack to the idol destroyers; today, the greatest base of Iblis upon the earth is smashed; today shirk is obliterated; today, tawhid is manifested in its most glorious countanance of love and self-sacrifice.

Suddenly a flood of light pours into the passageway. The sun appears on the peak of the mountain and issues the order to pass through.

The clamor of joy, the stream of sun and flood of people, all three mingle in each other and descend to the valley of Mina.

This multitude, now, is not only a group of white pigeons of peace, but more than that, they are armed mujahids of war.

It is because of this that the reference is made to order, discipline and command because:

"Night must be spent pausing in Mash'ar."

"On the day of the 10th, arrive in Mina."

The frontier of morning is the frontier of Mina; the line of morning separates night from day.

It is because of this that the command to pass the frontier, the command to begin the attack on Mina is in the hands of the morning sun of the 10th of Dhihajjah.

Mina is in the West and 'Arafat, in the East. The army is standing facing Mina; the sun rises from behind, from the heights of 'Arafat and pours into the narrow valley of Mina. The sun also undertakes a hajj. It rises in 'Arafat, passes Mash'ar and enters Mina.

The army of jihad and love, the mujahids who have come from 'Arafat and who hesitated the night in Mash'ar and have collected faith and arms there, must stand at the frontier of Mina, at the doorway of a town which is both the place of martyrdom and scene of battle, waiting, prepared and alert for the command of sunrise.

The sound of the footsteps of the sun.

Why?

Build yourself in the refuge of night

In the refuge of the night, collect arms.

Do not enter Mina before sunrise

– because the night is the speciality of pausing in Mash'ar –

Do not stay in Mash'ar after sunrise

– as the day is the speciality of pausing in Mina –

Begin at the moment of the sunrise.

This sun is the sun of the 10th of Dhihajjah,

The time of the attack of Mina has begun.

The command of the sun is the command of time.

Obey the determination of time.

Only await the command of the sun.

Only anticipate the rise.

Only the sun of the 10th.

Only the rise of the 'id.

O wonder!

There is still some distance from Mina till the bases of the satans.

There is still some distance from the place of arrival in Mina until reaching the front.

'Id should be celebrated after the battle;

After defeating the Iblis ; after victory; after stoning the satans.

And you, O brother, look at the nation of monotheism, observe the tradition of this nation.

'Id is not celebrated for the defeat of an enemy, nor for the victory of a friend but before the battle begins, before reaching the battle.

It means you have attained victory when you have made a decision.

It means when you have stepped onto the frontier of Mina, you are victorious.

And...what am I saying?

How difficult it is to understand this simple nation;

And how complicated is this simple ummah.

It means whenever its time comes, you are victorious, for the time of victory arrives.

If –

You had come from 'Arafat.

If –

You had spent the night in Mash'ar, in deliberation and preparation, bringing them to the morning of 'id.

No. No.

I have not mentioned the most important of 'if's'.

If you have come in the season;

If you were present in the miqat;

If you put on the ihram;

And...what am I saying?

Who are you?

Who am I?

The individual is good for nothing.

The Quran speaks about people, not an individual.

How beautiful is His Word: *al-nas!*

It has no singular form.

The Hand of God is in the multitude.

Movement, perfection, the vice-gerency of God in nature and...victory has been written in the fate of people, the unchangeable Tradition of God in the life of the multitude.

And the determined route of history is towards realizing the plan of God in the creation of humanity.

You and I? That which we can do is to discover this Tradition and rightly select this destined route: the determinism of history; the Divine fate of time; the decisive destiny of the life of humanity; and, finally, the defined justice spreading revolution of the world for it is the God of Abraham and the Creator of humanity Who says:

"My righteous servants will inherit the earth." (21: 105)

And His Promise is to whom? *"We desired to show favor unto those deprived and to make them leaders and to make them heirs."* (28:5)

Deprivation! That which metamorphosizes and effaces human beings; destroys and steals all human capabilities and all of the material and spiritual powers of a person. Deprivation! A word which includes all anti-human systems and all paralyzing factors of humanity: like despotism, colonialism, enslavement, exploitation, brain washing and all that from here on the enemies of mankind may invent.

Let them invent, but God not only proclaims His Will for the salvation of the condemned people and the freedom of the wretched of the earth; but He gives assurance that the Divine fate of history will place the reins of leadership and the guide of human society into the hands of this class; will make the abased, in all places and for all times, the heirs to all palaces of power, treasuries of wealth and cultural and religious capital.

Deprived upon the earth! What a resemblance! "The Wretched Upon the Earth", a book by Fannon.

On the Day of Resurrection, human beings who determine their destiny are evaluated and divided into two groups by the agents of God. The group of the saved and those who are destined for the inferno. Upon the earth, as well, the determiners of destiny – who, here, are the agents of Iblis – have divided people into two groups, those destined for heaven and those destined for the inferno. According to Sartre – in the introduction to this very book – of the two billion people upon the earth – in terms of colonialists – five hundred million are human beings and one billion and five hundred thousand are natives, the condemned, accursed of the earth, residents of the third world inferno!

But the scientific determinism of history[7] or Divine determinism of history – it makes no difference – has guaranteed the victory of the wretched or the deprived - it makes no difference – upon the earth; the Divine Will has determined the course of the caravan of humanity's ummah, children of the martyred Abel. History's determinism is the unchangeable course of God. *"Thou shalt find no change in the course of God."* (33:62) God gives both existence to creatures and direction. *"Surely His are the Creation and the Command."* (7:54) And you, a sign; your fate depends on you discovering the determinism of this course and adopting it. Nature has its own determined course; history has its own and humanity follows its determined course.

And you? Prisoner of four determinisms, the four great prisons, nature, history, society and self! You should discover the determinism of nature – and it is science – and consciously place yourself upon its route and in harmony with the determinism of nature, you will find freedom from nature's determinism. You should discover history, the philosophy of the science of history, and consciously place yourself upon its route and in harmony with history's determinism; you will alter your determined route of history. Discover the determinism of your social environment and recognize society's rules, employ them and with a conscious revolution, you will achieve freedom from the prison of the system ruling over society.

Release from all three prisons with knowledge and science.

But what about the fourth prison? The prison of 'self'? The prison of instincts? The prison you bear in your nature?

Science is impotent in opening up this fourth prison for the other three existed outside of your 'self', whereas this fourth prison is within you. Within you, it is your 'being learned.! A knowledge which must familiarize 'you' with 'you', discover 'you'; a power which must predominate over you, cause you to revolt against your 'self' and a powerful arm to convert and transform you from your self. And here, no longer, the science that we see, the science which is itself the great jailer of the scientist, rather, wisdom! Knowledge of primordial nature, consciousness of self, the light emitted by Prophets in the hollows of the earth, religion! A wisdom that reveals your inner prison to you, discovers the sleeping jailers in the depths of your being and a power which releases you from the prison of your 'self'. No longer the industry of science but the art of love! If your life has also become your prison, love breaks it – with martyrdom; if your Isma'il becomes an obstacle for you, love will kill it with your own hands – with that which is higher than martyrdom.

Freedom from the fourth prison with love.

The knowledge which grants you consciousness of self and Divinely-inspired creativity so that you your self destroy it as nature built it – and construct it as God Willed.

As you are only a 'being', you must create your own essence yourself – because the human being is created, has fallen into this desert and is left to himself. You? An existence without 'howness', a nothing who can become everything; a doubt, a vacillation, a possibility, an absurdity who can become a human being; chose being human; discover your primordial nature (religion); place yourself in its route, conscious of self; free yourself from the prison of the determined self, harmonizing with the fate of human beings; you can make a choice and recognize the determined route of history for history is the flow of the human being in the river bed of time; it is a determined flow, a 'becoming' towards God; and you, O to be nothing! Be 'becoming!' Recognize the human being. Chose to be a human being for this determined stream is flowing; it is a perpetual flow. The sovereignity of night in Mash'ar and the rule of three tyrannies in Mina cannot stop or deviate the victorious course of this determinism because this is a Tradition of God. *"For never shall you find any change in the course of God; and never shall you find in the course of God any alteration."*(35:43)

Your destiny is a text which if you do not know it, the hands of writers will write it for you; if you know it, you can write it yourself.

And you – O nothing, O who are conscious and free, if you come to the miqat in season and recognize and choose the course of your primordial nature – the line of the course of determinism of the human being – then you can become a smooth way under the feet of God's Will, a way that leads from home to the Ka'bah; a way that takes you from a swamp to the Spirit of God; for here the rule is what God has Willed.

It is the rule of the determinism of knowledge and, at the shore of this flowing stream, victorious determinism.

It is you who are free and can make a choice or remain on the shore and die.

Or the determined course of movement and the eternity of the people.

The flow

And you see -- according to Imam Sadiq -- it is neither coercion nor free will but something between these two.

What is the choice of determinism?

Bestowing, bestowing! Obedience and submission! Islam!

This great stream of the ummah, this eternal flow of people passes the frontier of Mina, it achieves victory in the front against Iblis and the assembled army which begins from Mina's frontier; the sun of the 10th of Dhihajjah raises the flag of victory over the tower of dawn and with the first smile, issues both the permission to pass and start on the way; both the command for assault and the start of the battle; both announces victory and the celebration of the end of duties.

This is the determinism of history, finally, decreed by the multitude.

But in the choice of the human being, finally, bestowing of an individual, you.

The if of the ifs

Is

Victorious

If you be continuously joined to the flow of the multitude

With the people who resolve upon God –

To the ummah

This flowing congregation

With the people of this boiling stream, with the Will of fate, the determinism of history; crush all stones and obstacles before it and – spill it into the sea.

Yea. If to pass through Mash'ar and arrive in Mina, you do not stop upon the way; do not lose the way; do not go on your own will, separate from the congregation, you will arrive in Mina and stone Iblis, sacrifice Isma'il and arrive at the highest peak of your faith and ideal; if you take steps along the path of the people and flow from the same place that the people are flowing; if you mingle your agitation and uproar in order to join the sea with the agitation and uproar of the people in Mash'ar – who spend the night searching for arms and the whispering of love for the next day's jihad, for it is a command, an explicit command of God addressed to those who have resolved upon the hajj, *"Then press on from where the people press on."* (2:199)

The army of monotheism, armed and determined, descend into the valley of Mina; the valley of Mina, the place of battle.

Stoning the Satans

Three bases, one after another, every base a few hundred meters from the other on a straight line, a route and today – the King's Way – each one a souvenir pillar – a statue, a symbolic form, an idol!

Every year their surfaces are painted white.

Allahu akbar! How meaningful.

The invading army arrives at the valley, stones in hand and prepared.

You reach the first idol (*jamarah 'ula*).

Do not stone it. Pass it by.

You reach the second idol (*jamarah wusta'*).

Do not stone it. Pass it by.

You come to the third idol (*jamarah 'uqba*).

Aim at it; do not pass it by.

Why?

Do not intelligent, logical, experienced advisors, teachers who guide people say: slowly, silently, gradually, sequentially, orderly.

But here Abraham gives the command.

In the first attack, aim at the last one first.

Did you hit it?

Yea!

How many shots?

Seven shots.

Did they definitely hit?

Definitely.

Did you hit its feet and abdomen?

No.

Did you hit its back?

No.

Exactly at its head? Its face? Standing before it?

Yea.

It is finished!

The battle is over. When the last one falls, the first and second cannot remain standing. It is the last which supports the first and second.

The battle is over.

You return from the last front. Other than the sacrifice, you have nothing to do; announce victory!

The last base to fall; victory.

Celebrate; come out of the ihram. Put on your clothes of life. Use perfume. Adorn yourself. Embrace your marital partner. You are free; a human being; you are victorious over Mina; a conqueror of Iblis.

What am I saying?

You are Abraham.

You have now reached the place where you can sacrifice your Isma'il!

The Sacrifice

After stoning the last idol, without hesitation, give sacrifice for these three idols are statues in trinity; manifestations of three satanic phases. Do not forget that this is resolving. Be continuously in resolution, conscious of self.

You must know what you are doing and why. Do not become lost in the external form of these rituals. Do not neglect meanings. These are all allusions. Do not remove your eyes – even for a moment – from where you are directed. Do not let formalism bewilder you in the labyrinth of complicated techniques.

Make a hajj of concepts, not just the hajj of rituals.

Here everything relates to intention.

The hajj is totally resolve.

Without an intention , other deeds are perhaps of and by themselves something.

If you do not make your intention known in the ritual fast, you still, at any rate, see an effect from it.

If you do not make your intention known in jihad, you are still a soldier.

But if you do not resolve in the hajj, it is nothing, nothing.

It is a series of deeds without benefit.

For these rituals are all allusions, signs, secrets.

One who knows not the meaning of prostration, only dusty's the forehead.

One who realizes not what one is doing in these rituals only brings back gifts from Makkah.

Suitcase full, but self, empty:

You act out monotheism in circumambulation in hajj.

You express the migration and the efforts of Hajar with the search.

And from 'Arafat to Mina, history, and the philosophy of the creation of humanity.

And the ascent of the mind from knowledge to love and the ascent of the spirit from earth to heaven until God.

And in Mina, the last phase of perfection and idealism, absolute freedom, absolute servitude.

Abraham.

Now you are in Mina. You are Abraham. You have brought your Isma'il to the place of sacrifice.

Who is your Isma'il?

What is it?

Your rank? Your reputation? Your position? Your profession? Your wealth? Your home? Your garden? Your automobile? Your beloved? Your family? Your knowledge? Your title? Your art? Your spirituality? Your dress? Your fame? Your sign? Your soul? Your youth? Your beauty...?

How do I know? You know this yourself. You should bring all of it, whatever it is, whoever it is to Mina and chose it for your sacrifice.

I can only give its signs to you.

Whatever weakens you upon the way of faith, whatever calls you to stop in your movement.

Whatever brings doubt to your responsibility; whatever is attached to you and holds you back; whatever you have set your heart upon which does not allow you to hear the message in order to admit the Truth ; whatever causes you to flee; whatever leads you towards justifications, compromise-seeking hermeneutics and love which makes you blind and deaf; you are Abraham and the weakness of your Isma'il makes you a plaything of Iblis. You are standing on the highest peak of honor, prevailing with dignity and virtue. There is only one thing in your existence and in order to attain it, you descend from heights; in order not to lose it, you release all of your Abraham-like achievements.

It is your Isma'il, your Isma'il might be a person or thing or a state, condition or even a weak point.

But Abraham's Isma'il was his son.

An old man in the last days of life, after a century full of struggle and mobility — a lifetime of migrations, battles, jihads, resistances, entanglements with ignorant tribes; a lifetime of the oppression of Nimrod, the prejudices of idolatrous custodians, the superstitions of star worshippers and the torture of life; he was a liberated, enlightened youth, an upriser in his prejudiced and idol-worshipping and perhaps even idol-making father's house — and in Abraham's house — a barren, prejudiced, aristocratic woman: Sarah.

He has now aged and is alone bearing the heavy burden of monotheism's mission in a reign of the oppression and ignorance of multitheism, forebearing the torture of a century 'of his responsibility to enlighten and liberate' in 'an age of darkness with a tribe accustomed to oppression'; he has remained a human being at the highest peak of prophethood and a servant of God at the termination of his great Divine mission; he desires to have a son.

But he has a barren wife and he himself is old beyond a hundred years; a person with desires who no longer has hope. Regret and despair swallow his soul. God brings

Mercy to the agedness, hopelessness, loneliness and anguish of His trustworthy Messenger and faithful servant who spent all of his life executing His Command. God grants Abraham's child to the female slave of Sarah, a black woman, who being of such a lowly class, she agitates not the envy of a rival wife; and a son, at that, Isma'il.

For Abraham, Isma'il was not only a son for a father.
He was the end of a life of anticipation.
The reward of a century of suffering.
The fruit of an adventurous life.
The only young boy of an old father.
And a glad tiding of hope after bitter despair.

For Abraham, it was Isma'il but your Isma'il might be your 'self'. Perhaps it is your family or position, your wealth, your prestige...how do I know. For Abraham, it was his son and such a son for such a father.

Now, under the rain of caresses and the sun of the love of a father whose life depends upon him, he grows before the eyes of his father – eyes which shine with joy under whitened eyebrows; a father who, like a gardner, only sees the fresh, young sapling in his vast desert and scorched life. It is as if he sees his growing, senses his caresses of love and the warmth of hope in the depths of his soul.

Through the long life of Abraham which had all passed in hardship and danger, these days, the last days of life, which, according to Gide, "One should drink every moment of with pleasure," are spent with the pleasure of having Isma'il.

The son for whom the father had waited in expectation for one hundred years, who then came at a time when the father was not expecting him, Isma'il has now grown into a strong sapling, a youth, the life of Abraham's soul, the only fruit of Abraham's life and the totality of love, hope and pleasure of Abraham's union.

"Abraham! With your two hands, put the knife to Isma'il's throat and kill!"

Is it possible to verbally express the horror of the father shocked by this message?

Even if we had been there and had seen, we would not be able to feel it for the magnitude of the pain does not allow the imagination to enclose it.

Abraham, the humble servant of God, the rebellious human of the history of humanity, trembles in fright for the first time in his long life; this steel-like hero of the prophetic mission melts. This great, idol destroyer of history is smashed. He is frightened by the horror of the message but the command is the Command of God.

War! The greatest war. The war with 'self'. *Jihad akbar* (the greater jihad)!

The victor of the greatest battle of history is now defeated, weak, frightened, distressed and wretched.

War? The war between God and Isma'il inside Abraham.

The difficulty of choice!

"Who do you choose, Abraham?

"God or your 'self'? Attachment or values? Union or release? Policy or right? Remaining or advancing? Prosperity or perfection? Pleasure or responsibility? Life for living or life for a goal? Affection and tranquility or ideology and jihad? Instinct or consciousness? Emotion or faith? Fatherhood or prophethood? Relationship or Message?

"And finally, your Isma'il or your God?

"Choose, Abraham!"

At the end of a century of the Divine Mission among the masses, an entire lifetime of the prophethood of monotheism and the leadership (imamate) of the people, the jihad against multitheism, the founding of monotheism, the destroying of idols, the eradicating of ignorance, the smashing of pride, the death of tyranny, victorious on all fronts, succeeding in all responsibilities, not hesitating anywhere for self and not being diverted by taking steps for the self becoming more Divine-like than any other human being, laying the foundation of monotheism for the ummah, pushing forward the leadership of human beings and always, everywhere doing well on all tests...do not become proud; do not rest; do not think you are a hero, invincible, without weaknesses; do not be deceived by your one hundred years of jihad victories; do not judge yourself innocent; do not think yourself immune from the danger of a fall; do not think yourself above satanic temptations; do not sense yourself to be invulnerable to the invisible hands that continuously aim at humanness. The sockets of your eyes are vulnerable to poisoned arrows. Do not assume that you have aged Rostam and confined him. The legendary Simurgh knows you better than you know yourself. It knows you are still vulnerable and penetrable. Covering yourself from head to toe in chain mail, you think that you are invulnerable? You do not know but it knows that there is still an opening to penetrate through , to shoot you with an arrow, to wound and poison you. It will blind you where your eyes are fixed in this world. O invulnerable one! It will darken the world in your eyes by shooting at the very place that you are attached to in this world, from the same rope which attaches you to this world and from the same opening through which you look at the world. O you hero! You who are standing and boasting! It will destroy you, cause your death, for Simurgh is the legendary Rostam's accomplice.

It is the collaborator in your fall.

O Abraham! The victorious hero of history's most glorious battle! O invulnerable one! O steel spirit! O you great Messenger of God! Do not think that now that you have come to an end of a century of your Divine Mission, you have traversed the distance between God and man. "*God is closer to you than your jugular vein.*" (50:16) The path from mankind to God is the path which lies between primordiality and infinity. What have you been thinking?

You achieved the highest peak of perfection in your mission but you are still imperfect in servanthood. O friend of God! O founder of monotheism upon the earth! O initiator of the way of Moses, Christ and Muhammad! O symbol of dignity, glory and perfection of human beings! You have become Abraham but it is much more difficult to become a servant of God. You must become absolute freedom and absolutely liberated. Do not boast, for one at one's peak is always in danger of falling.

And the fall of one who has reached the highest ascent is the most dangerous and disastrous.

Kill your Isma'il.

Kill him with your own hands.

Take your beloved son, the fruit of your heart, the particle of your soul, the light of your eyes, the fruit of your life, all of your attachment, pleasure, the reason for your existence, everything that has attached you to this life and has held you to it, the meaning of your being, living and staying, your son, no, your Isma'il. Grab him as if he were a sheep to be sacrificed. Lay it on the ground. Hold down its legs to stop its struggling. Grip its fleece. Hold its head firm. Press it to the ground. Twist it back so its jugular vein appears and plays not with the sharp edge of the blade. Amass not the skin of its neck. Bring not pain to the victim. Cut its jugular vein. Keep it under your feet until you feel it no longer moves. Get up from the cold body of your sacrifice and stand by it.

O you who have submitted to Truth! O servant of God!

This is what the Truth wants from you. This is the invitation of faith and the message of the mission.

This is your responsibility, O responsible human being!

O father of Isma'il.

Now it is Abraham who stands at a crossroads at the end of a long Mission.

His entire soul cries out – 'Isma'il'!

And truth pounds at his head – 'Slaughter'!

He must choose.

Truth versus interest fight within him: the interest which is attached to his very soul and the Truth which is attached to his faith.

If Truth had asked for his own death, it would have been easy. Abraham has devoted his life to the way of the Truth; this had assured him of being a liberated devotee of Truth; this for Abraham is a selfishness and a weakness.

Whatever is good and beautiful for beautiful spirits and good human beings, for Abraham – the Divine Spirit and exalted human being – is ugly and to be shunned.

Look at the relativity of the 'how' of morality in the school of Abraham and to 'where' it extends.

O beyond self, sacrifice Isma'il!

Doubt!

How painful . How dangerous.

And therefore, justification.

At a time when the faith of a human being calls out but the heart is reluctant!

Responsibility calls for a tearing away of the heart from that which the heart cannot easily be torn; he seeks for a means of escape:

And worse than erroneous justifications are correct ones for it means relying on a truth in order to disregard another truth.

And what a tragedy if falsity should take the intellect as a sword in one hand and the Divine Law as a shield in the other!

It is here that the Holy Quran becomes the banner of multitheism and even 'Ali is disarmed before it.

And the destiny of Husayn's ummah in that of Yazid.

Justification!

And the worst kind of it: rational justification.

And the most tragic: religious justification.

Escape from responsibility.

Sacrifice your Isma'il?

"Perhaps what is meant by this phrase is what we understand from it.

"Perhaps the meaning of the word *dhibh* (slaughter) may be its literal sense and perhaps it has not been metaphorically used. When it is said, 'Kill your ego,' it means 'abstain from and struggle against the temptations of the ego'. Be not a servant to it. Or in the words of an infallible Imam, 'Die before you die.' The word death in the second is perhaps in the literal sense but in the first, the metaphorical. It is a willed death. That is, 'kill your 'ego' ' . It is clear that what is meant is: 'Remove egotism from your 'self'.' Therefore it can be concluded that in this phrase the word *mut* does not mean death.

"Perhaps the pronoun 'you' in reference to 'your Isma'il' returns particularly to me and in this address, I am the person spoken to. Perhaps here this address is an address to all in general, but it is announced in a particular sense. This can be seen in rhetoric. Examples can be found in the verses, narratives and works of poets.

"Perhaps the intent of Isma'il is this very Isma'il, my son. Yet, it might have another metaphorical meaning, another attestation. The word Isma'il might be a general noun or an adjective or a word derived from another. It is not improbable that it not have a literal meaning and, in this phrase, not have a specific significance.

"Perhaps the phrase 'slaughter your Isma'il' is in the objective case; the word Isma'il may be a noun governing the genetive in which the noun has been omitted. This is common in the Arabic language. It can also be seen in the Divine Words. For example, *sa'l al-ghariyah* (ask the city) (12:82) means *sa'l ahl al-ghariyah* (ask the people of the city) and here the intention behind slaughter Isma'il might be 'slaughter the affection for Isma'il'.

"But suppose we reject these numerous possibilities, that is, suppose we assume that all of these probable meanings are impossible. Suppose we consider the meaning of the words of God to carry the exact sense as the words externally appear to have when they first strike the mind of the listener and that no probable meanings exist. Perhaps the time for the performance of the command and the Will of God Almighty is right now.

"The time for execution has not been set and stipulated in the text of this command. It is evident that this rational principle rules: whatever the Divine Law has not specified and whatever has not appeared in revelation should be entrusted to the intellect. A duty-bound person is obligated to adapt it to the circumstances, interests, conditions of time and place, possibilities and available means and tools.

"The command to jihad is revealed in the Book but people determine the form of jihad according to circumstances and exigences of the intellect or, in a Tradition, the command has been issued to search for knowledge and it is a religious duty for any religious person. Everyone is appointed to it, but nobody is bound to seek knowledge the moment the duty is given and made obligatory. If at the last moments of life, when one is dying, one takes action to perform this obligation, that person has obeyed the command.

"It is similar to the command to hajj that binds the pilgrims-to-be during their lifetime; they leave its performance to a time when they have freely lived and there is no problem in this, either, according to the Divine Law, as this is a duty which should be performed and whenever it is done, it is done; for believers conceive of the hajj as something they will each be responsible for on the Day of Resurrection, not in this world. The precepts of the Divine Law are to receive spiritual rewards after death and not to acquire perfection, training, nurturing of the mind and emotions in life before death.

"Perhaps this imperative verb, 'slaughter' Isma'il! is an imperative command according to the science of principles. A strong possibility is that most certainly it is a guiding command; it is not like the Quranic phrase, *auto al-zakat* which means that people are immediately duty bound to do so because it is a command of the Master for in a command of the Master to his servant, the command of which – that is, performing it – is obligatory upon His servant, it must be immediately obeyed.

"Rather, it is like the verse of the Quran, *'And do not swallow up your property among yourselves by wrongful means,'* (2:188) whereby God Almighty wished to guide us by telling us that rulers who wrongfully consume the property of an orphan commit an ugly act. Therefore the command in this verse is a guiding one and a guiding command is a command that even if not mentioned by the Lawgiver, the intellect would deem it to be necessary. In other words, a guiding command is a command by means of which the Lawgiver makes human beings aware of the command of the intellect.

"Thus, if we negate all other possibilities, commentaries and hermeneutics, so much is certain that what God Almighty wishes by the phrase, *"And know that your possessions and your children are a test,"* (8:28) is that 'affection for one's children is a test' and the meaning of what was understood is a universal truth. One should be in perfect submission before God and leave aside everything; even the dearest concerns in life should not create obstacles in your uniting with God and/or become tools to occupy you in order to distance you from God; and as Isma'il attracted much of the affection of Abraham, this affection was forbidden through the revealed words with the word 'slaughter' because a strong affection for children preoccupies the servant of God and prevents the remembrance of God.

"The purpose of forbidding this act, which is a guiding forbiddance, was to make Abraham aware of the fact that his affection towards Isma'il prevented his spirit and heart from submitting completely to the Truth; prevented him from loving something other than He. The fact has been proven elsewhere that the intention behind 'slaughter Isma'il' is 'slaughter the affection for Isma'il'. And the verse, *"And know that your possessions and your children are a test,"* (8:28) is in this sense.

"All of these intellectual and shari'ah categories, documented by the holy verses, narratives, reasonings of theology, principles, citations to the intellect and documentary evidence of the past, negate this command for it is contrary to the Divine Law. It is impossible to attest a command to a sin and a forbidden act to God."

Yea. Justification. Looking for a means of escape when responsibility become heavy and incompatible with what a person wants. When a 'truth' enhances one's material life, many people become seekers of 'truth'. 'Truths' can be satisfied by performing acts of charity, hand in hand with business, work, transactions in the bazaar and a nice, sweet, undisturbed, comfortable life.

When a truth is placed in the midst of the flow and course of one's life, it itself becomes a stock-in-hand and capital for business. It brings bread and water and consequently: a profession, an official, legalized profession which offers water and bread, fame and title; then every person becomes both a longer for truth and a fanatic believer as well as having the hope of being a source of service and a possessor of influence upon this way.

But when a truth confronts life and the seeking of truth develops inconveniences, difficulties, loss and danger... when the road is an up hill one, full of stones and sharp cliffs and there are many places to be ambushed by plunderers, when the weather is stormy and the night is dark and frightening, when companions are few in number and with every step, they decrease and finally alone! When tearing away your heart from all attachments that call you to stay at the bottom of the valley, when harmonizing yourself with nations and tribes accustomed to darkness in the valley who have all come to terms with each other, when the message of truth tells you to tear your heart away from the Isma'il of your fame, grade, soul and love and to go ahead but the temptation of the heart tells you to stay, to halt, to get along with each other, here the final deceit of the human being, who is both conscious and responsible, is justification; searching for a solution both to halt and to remain but to somehow or another narcotize the conscience; to choke the voice of reproach in the 'self'; to so alter and distort religion that it becomes harmonious with the world; to preserve one's Isma'il but not in such a way as others do who are condemned for denying rights and rebelling against God; who commit treason against the people, who drink wine with the intention of drinking sweetened water or with the intention of taking medicine. Justification means to give a rightful visage to something which is not rightful. You can name this justification what you like – jurisprudential, religious, common sensical, commonly practiced, ethical, practical, psychological, sociological, dialectical, intellectual...

But, on the hajj, God has termed it satanic justification and in the fate of the great Abraham, at that, the old man Abraham, victorious in all his tests: in his sincerity, piety, knowledge, action, anguish, jihad and absolute longing for the Truth.

One of these obvious 'perhaps' is to seize the powerful intellect and firm and pure sincerity of Abraham:

"I heard this message while asleep. Perhaps..."

Iblis kindles affection for the child in Abraham's heart;

blows a 'logical reason' into his intellect.

The first time

Stoning the first idol

He refrains from carrying out the command and keeps his Isma'il.

***

"O Abraham, slaughter your Isma'il."

This time, the command, more direct, more decisive.

The war rages within Abraham; the great hero of history is helpless and subject to distress, doubt, fear, weakness.

The standard bearer of the great mission of monotheism, a plaything of Iblis?

He is crushed in the struggle between God and Iblis; pain has set fire to his bones.

Human existence, oppositions in the depth of man's existence, intellect and love, consciousness and conscience, life and faith! One's self and God!

Humanity. This intermediate link between animal and human being, nature and God, instinct and consciousness of self, earth and heaven, world and future life, love of self and love of God, reality and truth, pleasure and virtue, remaining and advancing, presence and absence, to be and to become, captivity and salvation, deliverance and responsibility, tendency towards self and tendency towards God, multitheism and monotheism.

'For me' and 'for us'...

And finally, that which exists and that which must be.

***

It is the second day; the weight of responsibility and the rapture of desire exceeds the day before.

Isma'il has fallen into danger and his keeping him, more difficult.

Iblis must employ greater vigilance, logic and skill to deceive Abraham.

From the same forbidden which it made Adam eat of.

Abraham: a human being, this gathering of contradictions, the front of light and darkness, good and evil, the combination of putrid clay and Spirit, bad smelling swamp and Divine Spirit, this soul, *"That which inspired it to lewdness and piety!"* (91:8)

A doubt, a vacillation, a choice, that is all!

Relationship or the message

O Messenger of God! O responsible! O Messenger to the people, do you wish to remain the father of your Isma'il?

But...slaughter my Isma'il? With my own hands?

Yea!

Yea! You must overlook your Isma'il for God; the responsibility to ideology is superior to the responsibility to emotion.

The invitation of the message or the pleasure of being a father?

Iblis kindles love for the child in his heart and blows a 'logical reason' into his intellect.

"But...I heard the message in my sleep. Perhaps..."

This second time.

Stone the middle idol.

He refrains from carrying out the command and keeps his Isma'il.

***

"O Abraham! Slaughter your Isma'il."

More direct and more decisive.

The work of justification becomes more difficult as the illumination of truth and the pressure of responsibility are more direct and heavier than to be able to escape.

Abraham is so situated in such narrow circumstances that he senses a doubt in the message which is no longer justification; it is treason, the limits of growth and depravity have appeared so decisively and explicitly before his eyes that even the power and genius of Iblis are no longer effective in making sophistic statements.

Abraham senses that in denying this message, he has confessed to Iblis.

At the edge of a sharp cliff of a fall.

The fall of Abraham.

The idol-destroyer Abraham, the great messenger of God, the founder of Islam and the leader of the people.

From the highest peak of monotheism (tawhid)

To the most inferior swamp of multitheism (shirk).

And what am I saying?

Multitheism (shirk). No. Multitheism has multiple gods, the worshipping of others with God.

And now, in the language in which the Quran speaks about worship, monotheism and multitheism, Abraham stands at the edge of worshipping Iblis instead of God! because now quite clearly Iblis, in the front of Mina, stands face to face with Allah.

There is no way whereby it is possible to come to terms with both.

There is no way to pull back from both.

No co-existence, no neutrality.

O how difficult and frightening is this tale

And the human being, this Divine-like figure of the world, who can bring the universe under his command, how impotent!

He has the Spirit of God within him and yet "*is created* *weak.*" (4:28) He is not immune from fall in any position. In life, as a child who is just beginning to walk, he must watch out for himself at the edge of the cliff. Even the Seal of Prophets of monotheism – Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household – who is the greatest infallible person – if he does not watch himself, he will stumble and give whatever he has accomplished to the wind and he is even not safe from multitheism.

Abraham, father of the Prophets, endowed with resolve, killer of multitheism, destroyer of idols in the history of man, in the last phase of his life, and at the highest peak of his human power and Divine glory, only his affection for his son has brought him to the edge of Iblis' cliff.

The most powerful hero of monotheism and father of God's Prophets, after living a century as Abraham, and adorned head to toe with Divine signs, glory and certainty, now, a bewildered plaything of Iblis.

No solution has been left to you; God and satan are by each of your sides; which do you choose, Abraham?

The final proof has come for Abraham. He has no doubt that his message is the message of what is right. He has no doubt about the certainty in the message, for uncertainty is satanic.

He can still create a logical reason. His logical reason is still valid, but his conscience makes mockery of him. He senses and finds the illumination and warmth of what is right in the depths of his primordial nature, in his emotions, his whole being like an enflamed particle of fire.

That which is right, the Truth, is much stronger, more explicit and closer than to require intellectual reasons. The man of truthfulness feels it as the radiation of the sun; as he finds the existential self, he consciencizes the existence of Truth.

The human being who longs for what is right has a sixth sense about his Lord, a sharp sense which never errs. It is like a honey bee who searches and finds its invisible way to its beehive by a mysterious power of orientation from distances of hundreds of kilometers, over thousands of mountains and valleys, in the midst of obstacles of darknesses and storms and through innumerable mountainous routes and minor paths, overland and overseas; the human being who knows the Truth, finds God in this way and recognizes the direction in the midst of nights and storms, conspiracies and thousands of temptations, magicians...and Abraham, commander of the longers for the Truth of history, has spent his long life in longing for the Truth, doing what is right, has grown upon the way of seeking the Truth, gained maturity and been nourished and now, is it possible that he not re-recognize the message of Truth and not understand the temptations of Iblis?

Although a friend has now lit a fire for him which is more frightening and enflammable than the fire that the enemy had lit.

And although the enemy strives now to have the fire grow cold within him and appear to be a red rose,

Criteria of friend and enemy, Truth and falsehood are not considered as to what they do to you. These two have other criteria which are beyond the profit or loss of you and me.

Abraham is now aware of what to do. He has, with certainty, realized the purpose of the message. He understands that all such uncertainties were efforts of satan from the very beginning. The indescribable love of an aged father who, after a long life of anticipation and despair until he fathered a child, drives him unconsciously towards such justifications and uncertainties in order to find a way of escape, a solution to perhaps help him, without confronting God or disobeying His order, to keep his Isma'il; but now everything is clear and explicit.

Anguish! Anguish!

Ah. What tragedy. How frightening.

Abraham is responsible. Yea. He now knows it well but this duty is more bitter and more difficult than to be found in the mind of a father and that for such an aged father, alone – like Abraham.

And to slaughter one's only son, at that, like Isma'il.

If it were only the slaughter of Abraham at the hands of Isma'il, how easy!

What a pleasure!

But no. The young Isma'il must die and the old, aged Abraham must remain, alone, sad and bereaving...

With his aged, bloody hands!

Whenever Abraham thinks about the message, he thinks of nothing except submission and he no longer has any uncertainty. The message is the message of God and Abraham, this great rebel of history yields absolutely before Him!

But when he thinks about performing the command and slaughtering his Isma'il, helplessness and impotency so crush him under the pressure that his exalted stature bends as a lantern folds into itself; sadness wrinkles this clear face which is a mirror of purity and forebearance like a burned piece of leather and under a mountain of pain, darkness, it seems as if he hears the sounds of the breaking of his bones.

And Iblis who sees the sovereignity of weakness, helplessness and fear all over the soul of Abraham and sees what pain does to him, covets him, for Iblis – the revengeful enemy from the moment since the Fall of Adam upon the earth, lies in ambush for his children – is present wherever he smells human scent. He begins to work wherever he finds traces of fear, weakness, uncertainty, despair, envy, selfishness, foolishness and even great affection towards something. Bad things are good stocks for Iblis so that if something holds your feet from moving, he calls you to it and prevents you from doing your duty; he attempts to darken and weaken the explicit message of God in your heart, of affection for a child, *"And know that your possessions and your children are a test (fitnah)."* (8:28) What is *fitnah;* the test furnace, obstacle in the course of belief and Isma'il is Abraham's only attachment, his only weak point before Iblis.

Now, Abraham has deserted affection for Isma'il. The message is the Message of Truth; in his heart, the anguish of losing Isma'il has filled the place of the pleasure in keeping him; sorrow has attached itself to the soul of Abraham like an angry hyena and eats him out from within. The scent of grief intoxicates Iblis and brings him joy. Grief in human beings makes them delicious mouthfuls for the claws and teeth of Iblis.

Iblis again gains hope and covets the sorrowful Abraham; he comes to him in his disguise; appears in the depths of his unconscious consciousness and repeats again what he had said twice before.

The logic of Iblis is always the same; the repetition of one thing, although in hundreds of colors and with a variety of tricks.

"I...this message in sleep!"

But no. That's enough. That's enough, Abraham.

Abraham makes his decision.

He makes his choice.

It is clear what Abraham's choice is.

Which one?

The absolute freedom of servitude to God.

Sacrificing Isma'il.

The last bond that binds him to servitude to himself.

First he decides to tell his son his story.

He calls his son.

The son comes forward.

And the father looks at the elevated stature of his sacrifice.

Isma'il. This great sacrifice.

***

Now in Mina, in the stony solitude of that corner of the earth, a conversation between a father and a son.

A father who has a head of snow white hair and more than a century has passed over his weakened body.

And a son, newly blooming and fragile.

The sky of the peninsula...What am I saying? The sky of the world lacks the strength to observe this scene. History is unable to listen. Never before on earth has such a converstaion taken place between two people, a father and a son, not even in the imagination.

A conversation so intimate and so frightening.

It would appear that the father has not the strength to tell the story and express the struggles in his spirit; he is even unable to express in words that 'I have been appointed to slaughter you with my own hands'. He leaves his heart to God, grits his teeth and says, *"My son, I see in a dream that I shall sacrifice thee."*

These words are hurriedly tossed out of his mouth so that he not hear them, not listen to them and so that they would quickly come to an end. They ended and he remained silent with a frightening visage, a horrified look for he feared looking at Isma'il.

Isma'il, realizing his father's pitiful state, gives him consolance.

"My father, do as thou art bidden; thou shall find me, insha'llah, among the steadfast." (37:102)

Abraham has now found a wonderous strength, with a will which no longer seeks to be pulled by anything but a longing for the Truth which is nothing other than absolute freedom; with a decisive determination, he arises to the arising, so nimble that he once and for all makes Iblis despair; Isma'il -- the young man of monotheism - who is nothing other than absolute freedom, with a will which no longer seeks to be pulled by any force but the longing for Truth – in surrender to the Truth – has become so softened and tamed that he appears as a calm and patient sacrifice!

The father takes the knife and with an indescribable power, places it upon a stone to sharpen it.

Is this how he shows his fatherly affection towards the dearest thing in life? Is this the only affection he can give his son?

First he kills his inner 'self' with the power that loves; the power that gives spirit. He lets loose the juglar vein of his soul, empties himself of self and fills self with love of God.

A living being who breathes only for God!

Then he rises to the power of God and leads his young victim, who is standing calmly and silently, towards the place of sacrifice; he lays him on the ground, keeping him under his nimble hands and feet. He puts his face to the stone; grips a handful of his hair and pushes it back a bit; his jugular vein jumps out. He yields himself to God, places the knife on the throat of his victim.

Squeezes it with an angry power and in great haste.

All efforts of the old man are focused on this point, for all of it to come to an end and he be freed before he becomes conscious and opens his eyes to see.

But!

Alas! The knife!

This knife does not cut.

It brings pain.

What an unmerciful torture.

He throws his knife down upon the stone in anger. He roars like a wounded lion in pain; anger and anguish struggle within him. He becomes frightened. He becomes apprehensive of his fatherhood. He jumps quickly, grabs the knife and again rushes towards his victim who is calm, silent, motionless.

When suddenly

A sheep

And a Message which says,

"Abraham, thou hast confirmed the vision; thus do We reward the good-doers. This is indeed the manifest trial." (37:105-6)

Allahu akbar.

This means that the sacrifice of a human being for God, which was a common religious tradition in the past and a form of worship, is forbidden.

In the nation of Abraham, a sheep is sacrificed for a human being and more meaningful than this, namely that the God of Abraham is not thirsty like gods are thirsty for blood; it is the servants of gods who are hungry, hungry for meat!

And more meaningful than this.

From the very beginning, God did not want Isma'il to be slaughtered!

He wanted Abraham to be the slaughterer of Isma'il!

And so he became – so bravely.

The slaughter of Isma'il is now useless.

God, from the beginning, wanted Isma'il to be the slaughter of God.

And it happened. How patiently.

Again, the sacrifice of Isma'il is useless!

Here we are not speaking about 'the needs of God'.

Words everywhere refer to the 'needs of mankind'.

Andas such is the wisdom of God, the Wise and Kind Who loves human beings.

...Who raised Abraham to the highest peak of his sacrificing his Isma'il without sacrificing Isma'il.

...Who promotes Isma'il to the highest position of being the great sacrifice of God, without bringing any harm to him.

The story of this religion is not the story of the torture or torment of human beings and the thirst of gods for blood. The story concerns the perfection of humanity, freedom from the prison of instinct, freedom from the narrow straits of selfishness, the elevation of the spirit, the ascension of love, the miraculous authority of mankind's will power and salvation from any prison or relationship that captivates it and weakens its position in the name of being a responsible human being before the Truth.

And finally, arriving at the highest station of martyrdom.

Isma'il-like.

And greater than martyrdom.

That which still has no definition in the dictionary of humanity.

Abraham-like.

And the end of this story? The sacrifice of a sheep.

And what God seeks for Himself in this greatest human tragedy?

The sacrifice of sheep for a number of hungry.

And now, you who have arrived in Mina, you must have Abraham-like brought your sacrifice; you must have chosen your Isma'il from the beginning for sacrifice.

Who is your Isma'il? What is it?

It is not necessary that anyone else know. Only you must know and God.

Your Isma'il might not be your child or your only son; it might be your wife, your husband, your occupation, your fame, your passion, your power, your situation, your position..

I do not know. Anything in your eyes which holds the place of Isma'il in the eyes of Abraham.

Whatever has become an obstacle to your performing your responsibility for the Truth, has enchained your freedom, has become an attachment for pleasure which calls you to remain with your 'self'; which has, like a chain of society, tied you firmly to the ground; does not let you go. The same thing which makes you an accomplice of Iblis if you keep it. That very thing which deafens your ears before the Message of Truth; which darkens your understanding; which infects your heart; whatever justifies rebellion before the command of faith and fleeing from a heavy and difficult responsibility; whatever and whoever keeps you behind in order for you to maintain it...

These are the signs of 'Isma'il'. Search for them in yourself, in your lifetime; pick them up; slaughter them in Mina now that you have attempted to move towards God.

Do not personally select the sheep from the beginning but let God make the selection and grant it to you in place of the slaughter of your 'Isma'il'.

It is in this way that He accepts the slaughter of a sheep as a sacrifice from you.

The slaughtering of a sheep instead of Isma'il is a sacrifice. The slaughter of a sheep as a sheep is buchery.

The Trinity of Idols

Now, have you recognized these three idols in Mina? These three manifestations of Iblis who tempted Abraham?

Does the human being not pass through three phases from the time that it uproots the self until it moves on the ascent towards absolute freedom and breaks all enslaving bonds and attachments in becoming a total Divine-like being? Moves through the animal phase of existence for 'self' but with others – respectability; this is sublimated in the phase of Abrahamic existence for God but with self-authenticity.

Are these three idols not the three secret negative phases which in this present, greater hajj are positively symbolized by 'Arafat (knowledge), Mash'ar (consciousness) and Mina (love)?

Does the first idol not oppose knowledge ('Arafat), the middle idol, consciousness (Mash'ar) and the last, love, faith (Mina)?

I have no further powers of thought. My understanding does not extend beyond this.

But this question must be answered: exactly what do these three idols do, these three principles and powerful factors of Iblis which prevent 'becoming Abraham-like', waiting in ambush for human beings and not allowing them to perform their Divine Mission?

They negate and metamorphosize the Message of

Truth.

By relying on the human being's strongest attachments, which are the greatest points of weakness and the stumbling blocs in causing their fall, they paralyze them and prevent them from moving towards perfection and doing what is right.

Another sign which they have which helps us in finding the objective identity alluding to them is that these three idols are three independent idols; each has a name, title and base but all three are accomplices and all three follow the same course; all three stand before the way of a responsible human being and a human being upon the way.

Most important of all, although all three are independent beings, they are manifestations of one existence: Iblis.

A single existence, but, at the same time, three. They are three existences and, at the same time, one.

It is amazing that this is the scientific and prevalent definition of a trinity: three gods.

In the Jewish faith, there are three hypostasis as Philo said.

In Christiantiy: Father, Son and Holy Ghost.

In Greece: Three visages in a single head.

In India: Vishu - three visages, as well, in a single head.

In Hinduism: Meno in three essences: head, hand and chest.

In ancient Iran: Ahura Mazda in three fires, Gushtasp, Istakhr and Barzinmehr.

And in another place: intermediator of God, shadow of God and sign of God.

What is multitheism (shirk)? The earthly religion: rightly declared by the scientific philosophy of history as being the offspring of society's foundation, the justifier of the status quo, the supra-structure which compromises with the materialistic foundation of a society and, consequently, the narcotizer of the people's consciousness of self.

This is true and more true than has been understood by those who have expressed it – but in relation to the religion of multitheism. The religion of monotheism opposes multitheism and cannot be born of the same thing or have the same essence or role. The war of history is the war of religion against religion, monotheism versus multitheism ; but they have turned the social realization of the religion of monotheism into multitheism; multitheism hidden in the disguise of monotheism, which is even more dreadful...and more durable.

The trinity of Christianity has been monotheism. Are not Vishu and Ahura, etc., one god?

I believe all religions were based on monotheism and when, in the course of history, the social system was changed to multitheism, when the original classless societies were changed into ones with class distinctions and multigroups, monotheism changed into multitheism.

From Adam two sons remained. Two human beings: Cain, the landord, killed his brother, Abel, the herder. No one has spread the news of Cain's death because Cain has not died as yet. He who became Adam's heir was a usurper, a murderer, who committed fratricide, a worshipper of lust; a landowner in rebellion against God and successor not worthy of Adam.

The children of Adam who ruled history are the children of Cain.

Society grew. Institutions and disciplines become complex. Thus, classification, specialization and divisions came into being. Cain, the ruling power, the appointing force, usurper of rights and owner of everything appeared in three visages because in an advanced society, politics, economics and religion were expressed in three dimensions. Cain leaned on all three bases separately; he created the three powers of coercion, wealth and asceticism. And from these three, despotism, exploitation and deception appeared; monotheism calls the three manifestations of them: Pharaoh, Karun and Balam b. Ba'ur. But multitheism justifies these three gods of the earth in its three dimensional system of ruling through religion; and it named them three gods in the heavens.

These three gods call you from servitude to God to servitude to them. O you who put on the dress of Abraham! These lead you to the 'worship of Isma'il' so that they themselves dominate over you; they place your neck in a rope, empty your pockets, paralyze your intellect and lead you into darkness.

Strike! O you who have come to Mina!

O you who have brought 'Isma'il' to the place of sacrifice!

Like Abraham, stone Iblis in each of its three visages.

O follower of that great idol-destroyer and soldier of monotheism, destroy all three idols!

With the rising of the sun of the 10th of Dhihajjah, attack the place of Jamarat at the moment which time itself has announced, step in step with the ummah, with the multitude of wearers of ihram, setting out from Mash'ar, pass through the borders of Mina. In the first attack, stone the last one!

Indeed, who is the last? That it should be destroyed first?

Pharoah?

Karun?

Or Balam b. Ba'ur?

These three idols-statues of Cain's power and three manifestations of Iblis are multitheism's trinity against monotheism.

Aim at Pharaoh for *"judgment is only God's."* (6:57)

Aim at Karun for wealth belongs to God. (24:33)

Aim at Balam b. Ba'ur for *"religion should only be for God."* (8:39)

The representatives of God in nature are people; the Family of God on the earth are people and the earth is inherited by His virtuous servants.

That is, the sovereignity of God is in the hands of the people. And all capital belongs to the people. And they are totally responsible for God's religion – people!

Among these three, which one is Pharaoh that one worships coercion? Which one is Karun that one worships wealth? Which one is Balam b. Ba'ur that one worships the temple?

Every Abrahamic intellectual who possesses cognitive insight and a method for social struggle sees one of them to be more essential than the others according to the social order for which he is responsible.

A political combatant believes Pharaoh to be the last idol which is stoned first who prevails in a despotic, military and fascist system. An economic thinker who believes the economic factor to be the determining force knows Karun to be the last. A mujahid thinker, an intellectual combatant who sees ignorance, intellectual solidification and factors which cause sleep and which suffocate awareness, consciousness of self and growth to be in the religion of multitheism or metamorphosized monotheism and who believe that as long as minds are not moved, nothing will move, consider the last one to be Balam b. Ba'ur.

Upon the first two or three of my journeys, I considered Balam b. Ba'ur to be the last and stoned aiming at Balam, in particular since I found the Quran in agreement with this choice for it mostly attacks hypocrisy, multitheism, ignorance and it objects to the worship of pseudo-clergymen. *"Take they their divine and monks as lords beside God."* (9: 31) And the sharp, angry tone, in particular to pseudo-clergymen who *"were placed under the Pentateuch and they followed it not, is as the similitude of a donkey bearing books."* (62:5) *"And their similitude is like the parable of a dog; if you attack him, he lolls out his tongue and if you leave him alone, he lolls out his tongue."* (7:176)

And in the last chapter where the Quran comes to an end, my opinion is wonderously confirmed with a marvelous statement, with the power and beauty of the Divine words. The verse is addressed to the person of the Prophet. Where the Quran ends, it tells this great personality, the master of the greatest Divine Mission and the one responsible for leadership, consciousness and the salvation of mankind, "You are not secure from an evil. Take refuge in God."

Where it speaks about God, it introduces Him with three characteristics.

"Say, 'I take refuge with the Lord of the people, the King of the people, the Diety of the people." (114:1-3)

The negation of these three powers, which were exclusively God's alone, and which the three idols took unto themselves alone.

We also see that here, pseudo divine and spiritual powers have come at the end.

Even a person such as the Prophet must take refuge in the Lord of the people, the King of the people and the Diety of the people and from whom? From the evil of whom? The evil of *khanas.* Who is *khanas?* The Holy Quran clearly specifies, *"From the evil of the temptations of satan (khanas) who whispers in the breasts of the people."* (114:4-5)

We see the words are referring to a power which brings temptation into the hearts, thoughts, sensations and beliefs of the people.

And in Mina, it is Iblis who is relevant, who projected temptation into the heart of Abraham.

Therefore, the last one is this very satanic khanas... the pseudo-spiritual man who sells his religion, the pseudo-scholar who sells his knowledge, the intellectual who commits treason. According to the Quran, the first factor causing segregation, perversion and oppression in the history of humanity that leads the uncontradictory and classless society for the first time into discrepancy and discrimination because *"people are but one ummah,"* (2:213) are those who consider themselves responsible for religion, religious sciences and are the executors of religious and Divine Laws who had come to eliminate discrepancies, dispersions and contradictions and all of this, not because of religious prejudices and intellectual differences and not unconsciously, either! But consciously and because of aggression, oppression and envy.

People all formed a single group, equal and classless society, without contradiction and discrepancy. *"And God sent Prophets as bearers of good tidings and warners and* *sent down with them the Book with the Truth that it might judge between men in that which they differed and none differed therein but those very (people) whom it was given unto after clear signs had come onto them through revolt among themselves."* (2:213)

But this hajj is more profound and richer than my understanding can comprehend. Every time I went, I thought I understood all of it and the next journey would only be repetitious.

But on the next journey, I was surprised how little I understood about the hajj on my previous journey.

And you, my reader, do not think that what I have said of the hajj covers all meanings of the hajj, senses the richness of the hajj. No. What I really claim is that this is my understanding of the hajj; you must strive yourself to understand it in another way. This is not a practical treatise about the rituals, but a reflective one. This reflects the strength of a normal mind which has attempted to analyze this miraculous secret drama where the stage manager is He who Manages the universe. It may seem that I have attempted to pour the ocean into a cup!

It is because of this that on every journey I corrected my previous understanding and completed previous comments and I found new secrets and added new points. Thus my explorations and witnessing in relation to the previous journey were everything and in relation to the next, nothing.

On my last journey I thought to myself, "Why should I specify that which the Stage Manager has not specified." If they should have been specified, He would have done so. As He has not specified these three, this is itself a specification – are all three not one and one in three?

Thus specification of these three idols cause the mind to separate those three dimensions which are inseparable; because of this, He has not specified them so that it can be said that in each idol, the others are hidden and with every stoning, resolve to stone the other two as well!

Moreover, it is the moulded minds of people, the minds of philosophers and scholars who carve fixed frameworks and monotonous standards which they call sociology, the philosophy of history and psychology...the Creator of the hajj knows that in every cultural and civilized period, in every historical phase, in every social order, in every productive infrastructure, class fabric, intellectual suprastructure and mass communications, one of these three powers is the ruling power and preserves the other two; consequently the negating of it becomes the factor for salvation, the essence of victory and the 'id of Sacrifice. One must, therefore, consider it to be the last idol in Mina and in the first attack, it should be put under a rain of stones.

It is because of this that the intention of the stone thrower who comes from a developed, capitalistic country differs from that of one who comes from a declining, religious Middle Ages society or a person who comes from a fascist or individual dictatorial system although all three are the same and the last one holds the other two within because Pharaoh makes plundering legal for Karun and Balam makes it into canonical law. Karun keeps the system of Balam going by the power of wealth and Pharaoh supports it with coercion. Balam keeps the pillars of power of Pharaoh upon the shoulders of gods in heaven and Karun keeps them under the feet of gods of the earth. We see that each of them firmly holds their twin at their side with their two arms while holding itself up, helps the other two to stand; you who come from all parts of the world, during whatever era of time, hit the last one with the intention of all three, with the intention your Abraham had, responsibility which is expedient among your nation because as you reject Iblis, in his last deception, you automatically negate all his previous deceptions.

For humanity is always the victim of the last deceit.

Did you hit the last one? Face to face? On the head? Did you hit it? Seven shots?

The number of days when the creation of the world came to an end; the number of planets; the seven heavens; seven days of the week: that is, a jihad in harmony with time as the universe itself. Does it refer to a battle begun at the beginning of creation? Is it in harmony with nature?

What am I saying? That is, innumerable; that is, always, without end, without concession, peace or compromise, without a cease-fire. There can be no peaceful co-existence with idols; that is why your lifetime should continuously be spent in Mina, throwing stones.

Because seven is a number of multiplicity.

The last one falls. O Abraham! Iblis has fallen to its knees, paralyzed under your determined and continuous stoning.

And you, O human being! O vice-gerent of God on earth! You, like the Divinity, also expelled Iblis.

This only angel who rebelled against prostrating before you, your threw it to the ground before your feet with your Abraham-like power, became free, became Abraham! You who were a plaything of Iblis, worshipper of an idol, now, all angels prostrate before you.

You have now achieved the Station of Abraham. You hear the message and recognize the command. You return victorious from the last field of Battle. When you destroyed the last idol, you achieved the position of having slaughtered your 'Isma'il' upon the way of love. Now you can intend to slaughter your 'Isma'il' upon the way of longing for the Truth.

You return from stoning the last idol, victorious, love in your heart, a freed servant of Truth, you resolve to slaughter with determined feet.

And you step in the footsteps of Abraham, the Isma'il of your life in one hand and the knife of your faith in the other until you reach the place of sacrifice and throw down your Isma'il upon the earth.

Before the feet of your decision
Before your truth-seeking eyes.
You grit your teeth and tie your heart to God.

O you who have all become Truth! O you who have come to Mina! Place your knife upon the throat of your Isma'il.

And...

Cut the head of a sheep

For the God of Abraham is not thirsty for blood and does not need your Isma'il.

God will pay ransom for your Isma'il.

All these were to bring you here.

To bring you out of your dark home. O victim of the three shadows of Iblis!

To the place of sacrifice of Mina, O monotheist idol-destroyer!

And now, O you who have placed the knife on the throat of 'Isma'il' upon the way of God!

And have come to Mina to kill your Isma'il but now your hands are soaked with Iblis' blood and your Isma'il, full of glory, is by your side.

In slaughtering Isma'il you are now able to stone Iblis.

Whoever is able to bring Iblis to its knees, must first free the self from the ties of the Isma'il of self. Thus the situation is reversed, as long as the anxiety of Isma'il exists within you, Iblis stands erect in Aqabah.

How amazing! What lessons are taught to a person in this mountainous environment.

Noy you become Abraham. You have thrown Iblis to the ground. Bring back your Isma'il from the place of sacrifice. What you should have slaughtered was not Isma'il. It was your attachment to Isma'il. Iblis' pretext, Isma'il is himself the beloved of God and the gift of God, the gift God bestowed upon you and now it is God who pays personally for its ransom.

Bring back your 'Isma'il' from the place of sacrifice; return together from the front of Mina, from the place of God's covenant; carry forward Abraham's monotheistic mission upon your shoulders; go towards the people to establish the sacred land, the sacred time, the sacred society, the clear and secure sanctuary of God, building the house of liberty for the people; the secure, liberated shelter of equality and love!

'Id (the Festival of Sacrifice)

Now everything is coming to an end. The hajj has come to its end. Where? In Mina. O wonder! Behind the wall of Makkah. Mina is wall to wall with Makkah. It is in a suburb of Makkah, a few steps from the Ka'bah.

Why did the hajj end before reaching the Ka'bah?

Why not in Makkah, in the Masjid al-Haram or the Ka'bah?

And why in Mina?

You must understand this secret. You must understand all of the secrets of the hajj. You must meditate on what you have done.

Not deliberations in the solitude of self.

But in a congregation within a congregation.

Moreover, the hajj relies upon a congregation. Here is the place of the covenant of God with Abraham, Muhammad and the people.

People who have come from all parts of the world, people of different colors, different nationalities, different languages, different countries and different rules.

But all enjoy one culture, one faith, one history, one ideal and one love.

Every group is a natural and free representative of a nation and not officially selected, carrying a written command. Each person has come from the intimate fabric of the people, common people of the bazaar, farms and centers of education.

There is no stipulation as to class, occupation, personality, knowledge and wealth. Being able means having the power to perform the hajj and not necessarily to be wealthy. The hajj is not a tax on wealth. It is a duty, a duty like the ritual prayer for it requires having the ability which is a logical requirement just as the power to perform any other duty is required.

Here all true representatives of nations are assembled with their own particular sorrows and sorrows common to all.

The Pause After the *‘Id*

A time for ideology and a time for action. Today, the 10th of Dhihajjah, the ‘id of Sacrifice, the hajj has come to an end, but you must stay in Mina for the 11th and 12th. You may not leave Mina.

The 13th you are free to stay in Mina if you want.

On these three days, it is forbidden to leave Mina.

You are not even permitted to leave at night to circumambulate the Ka‘bah.

Why? Because the stoning has ended, the sacrifice is over. We have changed out of our ihram. We have celebrated. All the restrictions of being in the ihram have ended.

Then why should a million human beings stay behind the gate of this town and in this dry valley for three days?

To sit and meditate on the hajj; we must expound all we have done and understand it.

We should sit and discuss our pains, needs, difficulties and ideals with our fellow-sympathizers, fellow-sufferers, fellow-companions who have gathered here from all parts of the world with the warmth from the same love, having been illuminated with the same faith. Scholars from Muslim countries, responsible intellectuals from all continents of the world, Muslim mujahids entangled in their countries with colonialism, exploitation, cruelty, poverty, ignorance, superstition, hypocrisy and corruption should come to know each other, discuss problems and seek each other's assistance. Muslims of the world should study the world of Islam and Islam, in this, their contemporary age; plan and discuss the common dangers, conspiracies against them and the enmity of the great powers of the world and their internal agents. Find solutions. They should prepare a plan for a world-wide campaign against efforts of dispersion, blind prejudice, black waves of propagation, dispersion of superstitions which nourish ignorance, poisonous sprays of the feelings of revenge, the spirit of secularism, innovation, deviated tendencies, religious invention, cultural destruction and hundreds of other colorful diseases that threaten the ummah. They should aim at: achieving Islamic goals, human ideals, the liberty of enslaved nations, captive and oppressed Muslim minorities in fascistic, prejudiced political and religious regimes; the creation of the spirit of harmony, understanding, correlation of ideas and emotions; the strengthening of unity against common enemies as well as plans to eliminate scientific, intellectual and jurisprudential discrepancies between Islamic sects; reducing the distance, the differences; rightly coming to recognize and understand each other through discussions and disputes, true free discussions and a study of different views; and, in the light of the encounter of ideas and opinions, in searching for the truth, find a way to the original source of Islam.

A three day forced pause of a million representatives of Muslims of the world behind the wall of Makkah in Mina.

In this mountainous valley where there is nothing special to see and nothing to do, no bazaar to do business, no park for recreation and not even a habitable place to live in, nothing.

Even the construction of a building in Mina is prohibited by the command of the Prophet.

In these moments when the hajj frees everyone from ties and attachments to individual life; when the penetration of the powerful spirit of Abraham, in the personality of those who have assumed his role, have washed away fears, passions and weaknesses from the spirits, have agitated the power of self-sacrifice and the ideological responsibility in thoughts and emotions,

At the time when the termination of the hajj has filled hearts with success and the ihram, miqat, sa'y, 'Arafat, Mash'ar, Mina and *rami*, sacrifice and 'id caused the souls to kindle the fire of faith and love and has made all persons who are shattered in life and torn to pieces by claws and teeth of hundreds of necessities, anxieties and occupations now to be unified in sincerity and complete faith,

In such a land

At such a time

More than a million Muslims throughout the world must not end the hajj without thinking about each other or be dispersed through the earth and creep into the shell of their individual and daily life.

The hajj is to move together from miqat to Mina. All three stations of 'Arafat, Mash'ar and Mina are always there but the hajj does not always exist. It is only now that your breath is filled with the Spirit of God; when tomorrow everyone deserts here, it will become as any corner in the rest of the world, and a land with its only characteristic being that it is a place of no water and no life.

You have been brought here to teach you that the seeking of paradise apart from people is an ugly, monk-like selfishness. It is a materialism based on credit which is much worse than a materialism based on cash for it is like a greedy spirit of a business man who has left his seeking after profit, lusts and gluttony to be satisfied after death or is like a stupid bourgeoise who has refused cash and accepted credit instead.

An ascetic is an egotist just like a materialist. A materialist makes technique into a means and an ascetic, religion. A materialist makes science into a means for seeking pleasure for himself and an ascetic person, God. Both are seeking the same type of paradise. The former looks for it in this world and the latter in another!

But the Islam of Abraham, peace be upon him, and Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, has taught us that Allah hates such a holy egotist. If a person neglects serving the people even for a day, does not reflect on the destiny of society and does not even attempt to help, such a person has not only committed a sin but is not even a Muslim.

You have brought the hajj to an end. You have ascended to the highest peak of Abraham's ascension to sacrifice your Isma'il.

Yea. But this is not the end of the work. It is the beginning. All of these were to bring you out of serving yourself into serving others.

But not to overlook bread for fame but rather for God. It is thus said, "Come in the season," in order to join with the congregation for if you come late, you are not allowed in the haram.

And now, at the end of the hajj, all Abrahams who have destroyed the last base of Iblis — after cutting off the dearest attachments of egotism and after the congregational celebration of victory, O all of you who have succeeded in bringing your 'self' to Mina, before you disperse and even before you go to the House of God, celebrate your two great Abrahamic missions during these two days.

1. Develop an intellectual and scientific conference free for all to participate in.

2. Hold a great social and international congress.

These two days are specific to achieve a result from the hajj.

A congress held not in a covered hall but in a mountainous valley; not under a short ceiling but under the high, open sky without doors, walls, restrictions, boundaries or ceremony; a congress held not with the heads of states , official representatives or politicians nor professional diplomats nor political leaders nor secretary generals of political parties nor members of parliament nor senators nor cabinent ministers nor scholars of universities nor religious scholars nor prominent intellectuals nor economic authorities nor social personalities nor official dignitaries. No.

But a congress held from among the people themselves. *"And proclaim the hajj unto the people. They will come to you on foot and on lean camel, coming from every remote way."* (22:27)

Yea, the people themselves!

According to Aime Cesaire, "No one has the right to have guardianship of the people or to speak on behalf of the people."

And according to Chandil, "In a place where people are not present, it is a lie to talk about people. It requires a great deal of nerve to do so. Only God has the right to decide on behalf of the people as only the people have the right to be the vice-gerent of God on earth."

It is because of this fact that at the congress of Mina which is held by God, people participate in it without any intermediary.

In this congress, held every year in season, God invites the people of the world so that after the return from the battlefield of Aqabah, the place of sacrifice of Isma'il where they participate and renew their promise to Abraham in the presence of God, to conclude the allegiance made; to attempt to establish faith and the system of monotheism on the earth; to destroy the idols of time; to build the sacred city of the world. As a body of the followers of the Prophet Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, the Seal of the Abrahamic mission in the history of humanity. He placed the burden of the confirmation of the mission of the Prophets upon the shoulder of the responsible and aware, clear thinkers among the people: the mission to found an ummah of witnesses based upon the 'infrastructure of monotheism; the responsibility to establish wisdom, imamate and equity in the life of humanity and to take over the place of the covenant of God and the people — the land of jihad, martyrdom and love — in the name of an ummah ; committed to the duty of inviting it to beauty and fighting against evil in the life of humanity.

According to the invitation of the Prophet of 'the Book and arms', the front of the hardliners against the enemy and the softliners among themselves in the world should be made clear.

It is in the free congress of Mina where every year all Muslims of the world desert their bloody and dusty, closed frontiers, and the closed boundaries of political systems because of the invitation of the Lord of the people, the King of the people and the Diety of the people, in order to sit in this open mountainous region under the ceiling of the heavens, freely thinking, discussing problems and finding solutions, seeking help from their fellow companions throughout the world.

And an intellectual and scientific session, not in an ampitheatre of an academy nor in scientific gatherings in the universities and not in the surrounding walls specialized for scholars and specialists! A session of a few days, an intellectual and ideological session open to everyone, to scholar and comman man, to the professor of the university and the worker of a factory, an eminent and magnificent religious man and an unknown and humble farmer, all have the right to participate, to speak and express an opinion.

Here all signs, grades, colors and distances have been thrown into miqat.

Here all are one existence: human being.

All have one characteristic: haji.

And that is all.

There is no higher position for a human being than becoming Abraham.

And here everyone appears in the role of Abraham.

Now, at the termination of the hajj, do not disperse, do not return to your country, home, city. You must stay another two days after the 'id of Sacrifice. Sit. Sit together and meditate together. Give answer to this constant and important question.

What should be done in society?

Even before that, sit and meditate in congregation: "What have you done on the hajj?"

[illegible] throughout the world.

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] important questions.

[illegible]

A General Look

Let us try to reach a conclusion. We should realize what we have done. What meaning did all of this have? What are the secrets?

Sufism, without passing through knowledge ('Arafat) and consciousness (Mash'ar) starts from love (Mina) and remains in love (Mina). Philosophy comes as far as consciousness (Mash'ar) but does not reach love (Mina). Civilization, without consciousness (Mash'ar) and love (Mina) stays in knowledge ('Arafat). Islam begins from knowledge ('Arafat) , passes over consciousness (Mash'ar), a dutiful and aggressive passage and then arrives in the phase of ideal and love (Mina)!

And in the land of love, in Mina, how surprising that in this land, there is both God and Iblis!

But here you and your destiny are relevant and not to the world because only God exists in the world, monotheism! Human beings are referred to , in whom reside both the Divine and Iblis. Duality exists in human beings, not in nature. And Mina is the land of your faith and your love, your destiny – where the Divine and Iblis fight inside you for your 'Isma'il'. Mina is the land of your desires.

How amazing! On the day of victory, the 'id of blood, instead of the celebration of the birth of a child, the celebration of the martyrdom of a child.

The 'id of sacrifice.

Look to this nation and Tradition, history and glory of these people.

Not the people of blood and dust but the people of ideology and jihad!

The ummah of monotheism.

Servants who carry the mission of freedom of human beings upon their shoulders from the time of Adam till the end of time, who have spread the battle for freedom to the very depths of their primordial nature and who have expanded the scene of the jihad from Badr to Mina; the servants who so realize the meaning of freedom that they are bound not only to free themselves from Pharaoh but from Isma'il as well, and not only from their enemy but from their 'self' as well.

After the *'Id* of Sacrifice

Stoning

In the first attack against the last idol, on the first say, you opened the way towards the place of the sacrifice of your Isma'il.

You took off the ihram ; happily celebrated the victory.

And, now, it is the second day. You should stone; you should stone all three idols.

This time you should stone in order: first, the first idol, second, the middle idol and third, the last idol.

On the third day, stone all three idols , in sequence, as well.

And on the fourth day, you can remain in Mina; and if you stay , you must like two days before, stone all three. And if you go, you must hide your remaining arms in a corner of the battlefield of Mina under the ground.

It is a Command.

After the 'id, the time of celebration; during the three days after 'id, you must pause in Mina for stoning.

What does this mean?

On the 10th of Dhihajjah, I achieved the glorious position of Abraham. I found the power to sacrifice Isma'il. In the first attack on the first day, I destroyed Iblis' last base. I made sacrifice; I took off my ihram; the victorious battle ended; I celebrated. Then, why again, war after the victory of Mina? Why, then, stoning again after the fall of the last enemy's base?

This is the lesson.

It means that never neglect the dead Iblis who might regain life.

For a revolution is threatened with destruction, even after victory. It is in constant danger of anti-revolution.

Snakes with smashed heads rise again during the warmth of the glory of victory; the negligence of celebration and the pride of power. They change color:

Wear masks of a friend and demolish from inside, usurping all achievements of the revolution; swallowing that which the mujahids and passion players should inherit from the martyrs. Victory should not lead you to comfort. When you take the reins of Mina in hand, do not let go.

If you throw Iblis out of the door, it will return through the window. If you smash it on the outside, it will grow from the inside. If you weaken it in battle, it will regain power in peace. If you destroy it in Mina, it will destroy you in your 'me'. What am I saying? *Waswasah* have a thousand masks and disguises. If you uncover the black dress of kufr, it puts on the green cloak of religion. If you disgrace it in the visage of shirk, it puts on the disguise of tawhid. If you destroy an idol on its head in the temple, it will make its home in the mihrab. If you kill it in Badr, it will take revenge in Karbala. If it is wounded by the sword in Khandaq, it will respond in the Kufa mosque. If you take the idol of Hubal in Uhud, it will raise the Quran of God in its hands in Siffin.

And you, what a simple warrior, thoughtless intellectual! Do you really think that the war has ended on the 10th of Dhihajjah after pounding the enemy's base: that becoming the victor in the battlefield of Aqabah , you take off the battle dress and wear the dress of peace; apply perfume;

adorn your self; celebrate having thought that the jihad is over and danger has been uprooted ; do you really think you can leave the scene of Mina? That being saved, you can go to the House of God and occupy yourself with your pilgrimage and worship; or as a victor, return to your own home and busy yourself with your daily life?

O Abrahamic mujahid! Do not forget that the 10th of Dhihajjah is the 'id of Sacrifice, not the 'id of Victory. The sacrifice of Isma'il is not the end of the hajj. It is the beginning. The army of tawhid has arrived in the land of love; the ideals of the army of tawhid have destroyed the base of the resistance of Iblis and dominate over Mina. O you soldier of tawhid! Do not lay down your arms after the victory of the Abrahamic revolution; do not become intoxicated like victors. The danger of the revival of the defeated enemy still exists. Three bases of Iblis have fallen but they are still erect and have roots in the land of faith. You should keep up your legendary spirit, state of alertness, jihad after victory and the 'id of Sacrifice. With awareness and precise consciousness of self, with collaboration and coordination, with all the armies who have attacked from Mash'ar and have dominated over Mina, with strategic planning, with the discipline of a pre-determined period, you should continuously and regularly pound the bases of Iblis under a continuing rain of bullets; uproot them. The revolution is still endangered. The victory of the revolution is also endangered.

Do not become proud in your greatest victory!

For after becoming Abraham, you are still endangered!

Even after the sacrifice of your Isma'il, you are endangered!

For Iblis is a seven-colored enemy with seventy traps.

Yesterday Iblis made the life of Isma'il a means to deceive you.

Today it can make the sacrifice of Isma'il the source of your pride!

Therefore, continuously stone the idols.

Pound all these three idols as long as you are in the land of Mina.

For Mina is the land of your faith and your love, the place of all of your desires and wishes, the front of your victories and glories, the final destination of your migration.

It is your hajj and the highest peak of your perfection. It is the ideal of your life and your ideal life.

It is the destination of tawhid and more surprising, the place of ambush of your most frightening enemy, the three rebels of shirk.

You have faith; thus you are always in faith and faith is always within you.

Faith is always endangered; and the rebel against God – taghut – is always rebellious. After the 'id of Sacrifice, stone, as well. Stone the three every day as long as you are in Mina.

That is to say, be in jihad all your life.

That is to say, jihad is not the short way to bring you to rulership.

That is to say, jihad is not only a means to achieving power.

That is to say, jihad does not come to an end after your prevailing over the enemy.

That is to say, celebrate the 'id of Sacrifice; do not celebrate the 'id of victory.

That is to say, take off your ihram but do not put down the pebbles.

That is to say, victory can be achieved in a day but if you consider yourself victorious, it will leave all at once.

That is to say, for achieving victory over the enemy, a single stoning but for the destruction of it, seven stonings.

The fall of the enemy's base, seven shots; uprooting it, seventy.

That is to say, divide the arms collected in Mash'ar. How many bullets are they? Seventy? O wonder. Again the number seven, seventy. An attack on the first day to the last idol. For three days after, every day, three attacks, in sequence, to all three idols. In every attack, throw seven stones. Totally seventy. In ten attacks you come to the right figure. But the last three attacks are special to the last day, the 13th of Dhihajjah, the fourth day of the pause. After victory was achieved on the lst day, the 10th, you are obliged to remain two more days and fight. Continuation of the battle after victory, stoning the three-fold bases, one by one, in sequence.

The fourth day you yourself must choose. You can stay if your duty is not finished in Mina, if you still feel the danger, you can stay and if you stay, you must fight like the two days before; three attacks in sequence to all three bases. Therefore, you should bring seventy stones from Mash'ar for the battle. That which is a Command, inevitable, is that you should attack three bases seven times. It is because of this that you must divide the arms you collected. One-seventh for achieving victory and six-sevenths of them for the continuation of struggle after victory so that destiny of all movements and the omnious destiny of all revolutions should not be repeated; so that once again the destiny of Islam would not take place in history.

After the victory of Makkah, do not consider the surrender of Abu Sufyan as the Islam of Abu Sufyan; after the victory of the mission, during the twenty-three years of jihad, do not consider the fall of shirk in the external front, the destruction of the aristocracy in the visage of the idols and the domination of ignorance in the existence of the Quraysh to be victory; you must uproot the three bases of gold, coercion and deception which fell to their knees after Badr, Uhud and Fath during the two centuries and some of imamate with the continuity of jihad and the continuation of stoning after the fall of the base of Aqabah so that shirk does not wear the dress of tawhid; so that satan (khanas) who has been defeated at Khandaq does not creep to the opposite side; so that the Age of Ignorance does not become the heir of Islam. If you celebrate victory in Thaqifah, the executioner, in the disguise of the Prophet's caliph will shed in Karbala all that you achieved in 'Arafat, Mash'ar and Mina and toss it into the Eurphrates.

Continue stoning. O Abrahamic mujahid! O you who have come from Mash'ar! Iblis awaits in ambush at every one of the three bases in Mina, the land of faith and jihad.

As long as you exist, it also exists.

The Last Message of Revelation

The hajj, through its movements, declares a message as the Quran does with words. It has been recommended one should read the whole Quran during the hajj. Thus, we must have come to the end of the Quran by now. Now, at the completion of the hajj, let us learn a lesson from the last words of the Holy Book.

The last words of the Quran speak about a danger and the last movements of the hajj speak about stoning.

In the last phase of the hajj, the words are about the stoning of three idols and in the last surah of the Quran, negation of three powers. At the completion of the hajj, danger still exists; it addresses the followers of Abraham to fear this danger; at the completion of the Quran, the words refer to an evil and it addresses the Abrahamic Prophet to fear this evil.

Amazing! The Quran has ended and danger has not ended. The victorious mission has ended and danger has still not ended. Prophecy has ended and danger has still not ended.

Amazing! The Quran comes to an end with two surahs; the words in both of which speak about taking refuge from evil; in both it is God Who warns; and the person He warns is a person who has completed the mission of monotheism in history, the person who perfected the mission of Abraham. He is Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household.

And the hajj comes to an end with a two day pause in both of which stoning is referred to and in both it is God Who warns. The person He warns is the initiator of the Mission of monotheism in history.

And you, O follower of the Prophet of Islam, O you who have come to the end of the Tradition of Abraham, not with action but with the secret, where do you go in comfort from Mina?

At the completion of the hajj, O haj! Let us read to the end of the Quran and see what danger threatens the mssion of our victorious Prophet. In additon, before we depart from Mina and leave behind the three destroyed idol bases for our daily life, let us hear the last Message of God as to what danger He warns of to His friend – the human being appointed by Him to the people.

"Say: (O Muhammad): I take refuge
"With the Lord of Daybreak
"From the evil of created things
"And from the evil of the dark night
"When it overspreads
"From the evil of those who practice satanic arts
"From the evil of an envier when he envies." (113:1-5)

Here the words are about the external enemy and external enemies, external to my people, my country and me.

What is objective, what is obvious and what is a face to face war, is the darknesses, decadence and abominations which come like the night over the valley of faith and spread their black tent over it; rush in like a flood, overflowing into the valley of faith, spreading everywhere and contaminating everything; it also disgraces, abolishes and turns the light of knowledge, the clear sightedness of consciousness and the faith and ideal of love into a swamp; it obliterates and drowns them to such an extent that although you are in faith, you do not see it; although you are in love, you do not understand it; although you enjoy love, you do not recognize the Beloved; although you have faith, you do not find your destination; although you slaughter your Isma'il, you do not do so at the place of sacrifice of tawhid, but rather, at the foot of the taghut.

The darkness is intolerable.

You stone, but not Iblis, rather angels; you sacrifice, but not a sheep, rather a human being, yourself; you endeavor, but not with your feet, rather, under the control of the enemy; you circumambulate, but not round the circuit of God, rather with the intention of Nimrod.

Oppression is intolerable.

"When (the dark night) overspreads." (113:3)

And conspiracies both secret and open; magicians of politics; enchanters of thought; blowers of witchcraft; reciters of deceit who bring dispersion, spread enmity, create rumors, plough seeds of vengeance, change the hands of unity into tight fists to be used against each other; break ties; disconnect links; make brothers enemies and enemies into brothers; blow the magical spirit into complexes; disconnect attachments; paralyze will power; destroy faith; slacken decisions; breach agreements ; turn the unity of a religion into group of insects; cut into pieces the unity of the ummah and every sect and every piece a morsel under the claws and teeth of the dark night. For magic blowers are the mercenaries of the dark night as sorcerors work in the shelter of the night and for the night.

And finally, an envious person but not when that person swallows his or her envy, for this is a sick person, a selftormented sickness, but when he or she envys!

This is no longer the dark night, the foreign oppressor, direct, with coercion, no longer a blower; a hidden and ill-minded agent of the dark night who receives a wage.

But a friend! A sympathizer of the same front; not an enemy; not an agent of the enemy; not an oppressor (*qasit*); not a plaything of the oppressor, a common fanatic and a holy donkey who misses the truth of religion (*mariq*) rather, those who break their allegiance (*nakith*) – the dagger-thruster from behind who betrays but he is not a traitor; who beats the friend but he is not the enemy; who is the means of blowers and the pole of the tent of the overspreading dark night but wageless and beyond reproach.

He kills but his hands are not polluted with blood. He commits evil but no one becomes pessimistic about him. He digs deep wells upon the path of friends, not on purpose, but rather with a sickness.

The most disgraceful and untreatable disease: envy.

A complex which destroys a victorious revolution.

And throws down the most courageous mujahids from the highest peak of glory.

And ritually slaughters friends with the hands of friends.

And transforms a religious devotee into the lethal weapons of kufr and debauchery – without him wanting it and without the masses knowing it –

And it is therefore possible to rend asunder the tent of the overspreading dark night over faith.

To excavate the 'den' of the blowers and drive them from Mina.

But what do I do with the envious person who is filled with internal pain? He is a friend and tool of the dark night and a plaything of blowers of the dark night. But like us, he is the enemy of the dark night and perhaps, more than we, an enemy of the blowers of the dark night.

And it is because of this that in the rank of these three evils, the last rank belongs to it.

And on the first day in this Mina, it is the last base which you should stone.

For it is the final blight of faith and ideals within one.

And here, again the trinity! The three taghut.

The first idol: the dark night, the domination of night, darkness and oppression.

The second idol: the blower and its agents: sorcerors of dispersion and those who waste thoughts, ethics and awareness; pavers of the way of thoughts and culture for the dark night, hypnotizers of the masses in the skirt of the overspreading night.

The third idol: an envious person. The fifth column of darkness, the unconscious plaything of blowers; a friend in the service of the enemy and with all of this, the saving of love from these three taghut is easier.

Let daybreak appear, the breaker of morning pour a stream of white light over the valley of Mina.

When the blade of the sun tears down the tent of the dark night, it removes the sovereignity of darkness and oppression from Mina; drives blowers who have taken shelter under the dark night to hide under rocks and in the caves of Mina; and, finally, when the power of night ceases, the deceit of the sorcerers of the night cease; complexes of envy also remain shut and harmless, buried in the depths of friends!

All these are the work of night; these three evils are the wickednesses of the night; let the night die.

Let the morning dawn rise, O God of dawn!

"Lord of the Daybreak."

But in the last surah, the words refer to a most frightening danger. It is however clear that freeing of faith is more difficult.

And it is due to this that Fakhr Razi said about the *surah falaq*, "The stress is on one Quality of God and here (*surah nas*), it is on three Qualities."

From the beginning of the words and the tone of the words, it is clear that the story is very serious, full of conflicts and complicated.

In that surah, God is interpreted as the Lord of Daybreak, as the word is about a power – the enemy of daybreak – which lives in darkness; it is sufficient if the dark veil of night is split with a blade of light; when the daybreak appears, they die.

In this surah, God is interpreted as Lord, King and Diety of the people. The words refer to powers pretending to be God, the enemies of the people, who are the claimants of three titles of God among the people:

"Say: I take refuge in
"The Lord of the people,
"The King of the people,
"The Diety of the people..." (114:1-3)

In the previous surah, the words referred to the world, society and dark powers which dominate over secret agents who intentionally blow evil into thoughts and those selfish persons who, because of sickness, commit treason. The words refer to three anti-human blights, three anti-social powers, three criminal powers: oppression and darkness, corruption and perversion, selfishness and treason. And who are the victims: human beings, human society, the revolutionary movement.

And here it is a social system which is referred to, class infrastructure; people and powers ruling people; those who are involved in the destiny of people; people in their relation to God and to claimants of a diety. Here basic evil and the perpetual enemy of people are referred to, victims, not human kind or human society; rather a class, 'people'.

It is only in relation to people that an idol is build and taghut is worshipped; can come to claim God's position, God's Qualities, and the title and particularities of God; it is only in relation to God with the people, not with the world and nature that it intervenes so that the servants of God are drawn to enslavement and despite the imagination of scholars who think in solitude – who read facts in textbooks not in the context of realities – tawhid and shirk are not just two philosophical views; theological discussions within the four walls of schools and temples. But rather they are living realities, in the depths of the human being's primordial nature, in the context of the life of the masses, in the heart of encounters, contradictions, the movement of history, the class war of people and enemies of people throughout time; opposed to what those thinkers who think in solitude imagine, shirk is a religion, a religion ruling over history. Yea, the opium of the people! And tawhid, the condemned religion of history; the blood of people; the primordial nature, mission, weapon of the people; and the greatest and most profound, most clandestine tragedy of humanity – so much so that intellectuals have still not discovered it – is the enslavement of people with the sole claim of freedom of the people; the death and abjectness of the people with the capital resources of life and the honor of the people! How? By metamorphosizing religion through religion! The great hypocrisy of history; Iblis in the sacred image of God! Tawhid in the service of shirk! Shirk? Religion in the hands of earthly gods, the signs of satan! *Khanas! Khanas* – the greatest evil and enemy of the people, *nas.*

And it is because of this that the word *nas*, people, is repeated everywhere.

Who are these gods of the earth who have established powers for themselves among the people? Who are these taghuts who have rebelled against God and the people and have revolted against the Truth?

Again, three taghuts! Trinity!

Usurper of these three titles, declared in this surah for God and a particularity of God alone.

Tawhid: the unity of Qualities!

And its opposite, shirk, trinity of shirk, Cain , the executioner who appears in three visages and reigns over the people – children of the martyred Abel.

Cain is one. Pharaoh, Karun and Balam b. Ba'ur are three manifestations of this one, not three bodies, but three visages.

And strangely enough, all trinities of history are like this. In all religions of three gods, the deity is one with three faces.

For at the beginning, humanity lived as brothers because forests and streams were the property of all peoples. They all ate freely of the blessings of nature as God was the Owner and all servants were equal, the age of freely hunting and fishing. Anyone who caught a wild beast, tamed it; ethics were Abelian. Cain become a farmer saying, "This land is my property." That is, it does not belong to you.

It is one, but, at the same time, three. It is three and, at the same time, one!

Oneness was changed to two and the worship of One was changed to the worship of two. Cain took the place of God, appearing in three visages and the worship of three, trinity!

Trinity, this disgraceful triangle in which all prophets, longers for justice and martyrs of humanity are buried.

A disgraceful talisman, which, like the yoke of captivity, fell upon the neck of the people making servants of the Lord of the universe, the slaves of the gods of society, a triangular talisman! Three partners of one company! The first one enchained the necks of the people; the second one emptied their pockets and the third – partner of the other two – in the disguise of a spiritual man, in the language of the heavens, hummed in their ears:

"Have patience, my religous brother. Leave the world to those who are of it. Let hunger be the capital for the pardon of your sins. Forebear the hell of life for the rewards of paradise in the Hereafter. If they only knew the reward of people who tolerate oppression and poverty in this world, they would begrudge you your future prosperity, even though you be the misfortunate of today.

"Keep your stomach empty of food, O brother, in order to see the light of wisdom in it.

"What is the remedy? Whatever befalls us; the pen of destiny has written on our foreheads from before, 'The prosperous are prosperous from their mother's womb and the wretched are wretched from their mother's womb'. Every protest is a protest against the Will of God; give thanks for His giving or non-giving. Let the deeds of everyone be accounted for on the Day of Reckoning. Be patient with oppression and give thanks for poverty. Do not breathe a word so that you do not lose the reward of the patient in the Hereafter. Release your body so as not to require clothes! Do not forget that the protest of a creature is protest against the Creator. The accounting of Truth and justice is the work of God, not the masses; in death, not in life. Do not pass judgment for the Judge of the judgment is God. Do not be shamed on the Day of Resurrection when you see that God, the Merciful, the Compassionate forgives the oppressor who you had not forgiven in this world. Everyone is responsible for his own deeds. The command to good and preventing evil? Yea. But, first: its condition is having knowledge and piety. Second: having certainty that it will have an effect and will result in a change and thirdly: if there is the possibility of there being a loss or harm for you, the duty is cancelled."

And these three are accomplices and collaborators. Cain in three masks, the three constant gods of the trinity, whether in the dress of kufr or Islam, shirk or tawhid, ruling over the destiny of the masses, always and everywhere – in the name of religion – over the expanse of the earth throughout time!

These three taghuts are three visages of Cain; Cain the owner who murdered his brother Abel, the shepherd and then his children, without a father, in the guardianship of their uncle, the murderer.

An executioner, the heir of the one he martyred.

Wonder: That the Abrahamic Prophets – callers to the One God and justice, heirs to Abel, human beings in the age of pastroalism and equality – were all shepherds.

According to the explicit declaration of the last messenger of these appointed shepherds, the 'Prophet of the people' appointed by God, the Prophet who himself grazed the sheep of the people of Makkah in Qararit – "There is no Prophet who did not graze sheep!" There is no bearer of a mission who did not graze sheep.

And this is the tradition of Cain and his triple sons: wolf, fox and rat and their perpetual struggle in history to nurture lambs, the children of Abel – the people – through despotism, deception or exploitation.

And therefore we see that in every age, instead of a philosopher, scholar, wise man and leader, in a civilized town, in the heart of a culture, a traditional center of learning or a religious temple, a shepherd from among the people arose suddenly, with an astonishing rage, from the bosom of the dry desert and released the sheep, attacked the gods of the earth with his shepherd's staff in order to guide and bring salvation for the ummah which was being slaughtered by Cainian powers!

It is here one realizes the profound meaning and beauty of the Words of God in the Quran Who repeats: "A Messenger is sent from the people themselves. He is sent with the language people speak." It explicitly says, "We sent Messengers with distinct signs and with them We revealed the Book and Balance so people would revolt for equality and justice and also iron descended with them which carries strength and profit for the people."

And it is because of this that throughout history, wherever a Prophet was appointed by God from among the people themselves or a longer for justice arose from among the people with the responsibility of calling the children of Abel – the people – to monotheism, justice and consciousness, they attacked him with full force and killed him. And then after a full generation or less, they would take on the role of mourners of him, heirs to his faith and custodians of his ummah.

If a Prophet was victorious over them, they submitted themselves, changed their clothes and in a full generation or less became his Caliph and deputy, master of his banner, Book seal and sword!

There is one Cain and in three visages. Or seven colors and seventy disguises, seven thousand names, seventy thousand traps.

There is one Cain who is a murderer and his brother, his victim.

There is one Cain who is a possessor and people are his possession.

There is one Cain who is ruler and people are his condemned.

There is one Cain who is a witch and people are his bewitched.

And it is ownership which made two brothers, enemies; two equalities, into two inequalities.

Human beings into two races, society into two classes, history into two dimensions, one God into two gods: duality.

According to the Quran: arrogance and deprivation!

What is deprivation? What a great and 'roomy' word. Anything that deprives people and drives them to being deprived.

There is one Cain and one deprivation in three dimensions from three bases at the hands of his three sons:

Either put him in chains with force: Despotism. Politics. Pharaoh.

Or suck his blood through gold: Exploitation. Economy. Karun!

Or deceive him with hypocrisy: Deception. Faith. Balam b. Ba'ur.

And there is one ruling class in three visages. There are three ruling powers in one class. There is one Cain who finds three manifestations and changes one god into three: trinity!

One, and, at the same time, three; three and, at the same time, one!

But in seven colors, seventy disguises, seven hundred names, seventy thousand traps!

Wearing a disguise or undisguised; kufr or religion; shirk or tawhid; whip or law; dictatorship or democracy; enslavement or liberty, feudalism or bougeoisie; religion or science; spirituality or intellectualism; philosophy or Sufism; pleasure or asceticism; savageness or civilization; decadence or progress; materialism or spiritualism; Christianity or Islam; Sunni or Shi'ite...

They come and go. If you drive them away from the door, they return over the wall.

If you crush slavery, the master becomes a feudalist and the slave , a peasant. If you destroy feudalism through great revolutions, the feudalist becomes a capitalist and the former is made into a worker.

Moses drowns Pharaoh in the waters of the Nile with the miraculous power of the whitened hand of monotheism, buries Karun in the earth and effaces the religion of witchcraft with the staff of the mission.

But the Pharaoh drowned in the Nile immediately raises his head out of the River Jordan and becomes the heir of Moses in the name of Shamoon, takes the staff of Moses in hand instead of the whip; the sorcerers of Pharaoh become the sons of Aaron and companions of Moses, taking in hand the Pentateuch, instead of the magic staff; Balam b. Ba'ur becomes the Sign of God; Karun receives the trust of monotheistic people; and all three swallow up Palestine in the name of the Promised Land: the Septians of old build the new Coptics!

The promised Christ appears and abolishes the Jewish religion, stones the Roman Empire.

Caesar becomes Pope; Jewish rabbis become Christian monks. The Jewish rabbis become priests, Roman senators become cardinals of the Vatican, the palace becomes a church, Caesar becomes Pope and Jupiter becomes Christ.

Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, arises. Caesar and Khosrow are stoned. Priest and high priest are rejected. Arab and non-Arab aristocrats are negated. Caesar and Khosrow become Caliph. Priest and high priest: religious leader and judge. Landlords, commanders, dignatories, aristocratic families, feudalists and nobles become companions, masters, holy personalities and owners possessing noble descent and lineage. The Sassanid monarchy and the Roman empire become the caliphate of God's Prophet in name. Churches and fire temples become mosques; massacres become jihad; plunderings become the poor-rate (*zakat*); the abjectness of the people becomes the Will of God...

The family of Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, is either killed or imprisoned. It becomes the victim of usurpation, oppression, massacre and captivity while the family of Abu Sufyan and 'Abbas becomes heir to Muhammad.

'Ali, peace be upon him, in opposition, stands firm for the continuation of Muhammad's Tradition. True leaders fight against the caliphate for 250 years and become martyrs. Carrying the banner of true leadership during the reign of oppression, their justice-seeking followers continue the red course of Shi'ism. In order to abolish oppressive regimes and unjust commands, they make imamate and justice the slogans of their religion during the rule of the Traditions of ignorance and reigns of the aristocratic caliphate.

After the elapse of a thousand years of jihad and martyrdom upon the way of imamate and justice, suddenly the caliph becomes a Shi'ite. The Safavid monarchy becomes heir to the Alavi leadership; the house of the caliphate becomes the palace of Ali Qapu.

In Europe, the Renaissance gains victory over the church. Science replaces religion. Old schools become abandoned in the face of newly established universities and scholars drive clergymen to the corners of temples.

Balam b. Ba'ur comes from the church to the university.

The revolution in France uproots feudalism; Karun, the landlord, is stoned in the countryside. He immediately returns to town and becomes a banker.

Pharaoh's head is cut by the blade of the guillotine of the revolution. He is stoned out of the palace of Versailles but with the treasure of Karun and the witchcraft of Balam, he pops his head out of the democratic ballot box.

Our cousins do not leave us alone, that is, the three sons of Cain. The same three brothers who are accomplices and collaborators in all times and in all places. If you take the whip of coercion away from the wolf, the rat will buy you with gold. If you do not sell out, the fox will deceive you with religion. And if that does not work, with science; and if that does not work, with philosophy.; and if that does not work, with ideology...if that does not work, with games, if that does not work, with futile struggle or with sham fights; if that does not work, with weeping and lamentation, prayer, mourning, beating your chest and head, uproar, subjectivity, spiritual amusements, whatever makes you neglect the present; all hates are made to face towards history; all loves belong to after death!

And if that does not work, it will deceive you with the insanity of consumption, pleasures, luxury, pretense, grade, cash on hand, loan, installments, working like a dog and its name, life; work and overtime wages and its name, welfare! Fright, flattery and abjectness, spending life running from morning to night and standing in the back rows for a few years! All freedoms, values and opportunities are sacrificed for luxury: offering your future to the new masters for what you ate in the past; selling the comforts of life in order to purchase the means of comfort, galloping till death and during a lifetime, not having a moment for deliberation, not finding a chance for understanding. If that does not work, the commotion of jazz, sex and...and if that does not work, the allures of Sufism, the ecstasy of heroin, marijuana, LSD and thousands of other techniques and thousands of other so-called truths and falsehoods, whatever will keep you occupied with yourself and heedless of them!

Whatever stops you from the way, whether it be called kufr or faith.

And we people, the deprived everywhere upon the earth, the continuous minor orphans of all ages, the true servants of God, the real children of Adam, the sentries of brotherhood, the true lovers of equality, the representatives of pure primordial nature (*fitrat*), the rightful tawhid, unity, peace...the remains of an age in which humanity was a unified ummah at the table of the Lord of nature. All these blessings were buried under the earth with the martyrdom of Abel, when the blood of our father – the innocent victim of ownership – was spread over the earth through deceit and treachery and they remained within us as desire, faith.

And with his vengeance, the restlessness of a mission, which exists within us as the flame of hope.

The banner of tawhid, the belief in the One God, is the torch of this hope and the knowledge of this mission which is passed from hand to hand by the appointed shepherds, messengers from the history of knowledge ('Arafat) to faith (Mina), becomes the heritage of generation after generation from Abel to Abraham, from Abraham to Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household, and from Muhammad to Husayn, peace be upon him, from Husayn...

In all months, in all days, in all lands, until the end of time,

Until the world-wide revolution for justice, the leadership (imamate) of the condemned of history, the inheritance of the deprived upon the earth.

Switching hands, the banner draws a red line on the surface of the earth and on the bed of history.

And the banner of shirk – the belief in multiple gods – is the banner of tyranny, hunger and ignorance and it stands hoisted in the hands of the three satans.

Kufr and religion are not prejudice and schism, are not unafflicted visions of an unafflicted philosopher or Sufi. Kufr and religion are the depravity and growth of humanity.

The qualities of kufr and religion are clear and the signs of each are apparent. We are talking about growth and depravity and the war between equity and cruelty. If anything but these elements exists, they are deceit and hypocrisy. Do not listen to just any words because in this totally hypocritic history, only the children of Cain have the right to speak or even talk about right and religion. What am I saying? Only they have the right to speak about the martyred Abel and the destiny of Abel's survivors.

Listen to the words of the Quran alone and not to those who speak for it as Cainians have also become commentators. Listen only to the Quran. It is the only document preserved from their theft. Listen to it to tell of the history of mankind and interpret the meaning of mission.

"People were but one ummah." (2:213)

The people were a unique society. God appointed the Prophets, those warners and bringers of good tidings, those makers of disputes not because of prejudice, not because of diversity of opinions and faith, not unconsciously but consciously based on evil intentions and envy, to disregard rights and oppression.

Listen to the words of God to tell you what the Prophets were assigned to do and why they have been sent to us.

"Indeed We sent Our Messengers with the clear signs and We sent down with them the Book and the Balance so that people arise for equity." (57:25)

Equity means: the realization of this principle: 'Everyone according to his share and right.' And now, growth and depravity have been separated and the boundary of each made clear, the boundary of kufr and religion are evident, the roles of each are clear.

Kufr and religion, shirk and tawhid stand opposite each other with clear and distinguishable ranks.

Refer again to the Quran to show you simply, straightforwardly, clearly and effectively but not in sophisticated words of philosophy and Sufism, nor scholarly words but in words the common people may understand and better understand, decisive and clear.

"The believers fight in the Way of God and the kafir fight in the way of the taghut. (4:76) and immediately issues the command, *"Fight you, therefore, against the friends of satan, for the trick of satan is weak."*

Who are its friends?

Yea. The three-fold taghut.

And you, Companions of God! O you in restless offensive against Iblis! Wearing the dress of piety, protect your Divine self in the highest tower of wisdom from the posionous, black winds of witchcraft.

The spider of deception has woven a web of oppression from the warp of wealth and the weft of coercion upon the Way of God.

"Do not fear death. Do not ask for reprive for a murderer. Exercise piety. You will not be oppressed, even to the extent of a tiny white fissure in the groove of a date seed."

And you, monotheistic human being who are responsible for the reprisal of Abel, who carry on your shoulders the mission of all Messengers of the Book, Balance and Iron.

O heir of Adam! People!

O symbol of power, freedom and consciousness! Seek refuge in the One God from these taghuts who deprive through shirk because He is the Lord of the people.

King of the people.

Diety of the people.

You who have passed through ‘Arafat, Mash‘ar and Mina upon the red line of martyrdom,

And have stepped on the ruins of the taghut of Aqabah.

And you who have ascended tawhid's highest peak of freedom, you have conquered Mina's land your self.

O follower of Abraham's mission! O follower of Muhammad's Tradition!

Be aware, fear!

You are endangered!

In danger of Cain, in danger of the return of the three Cainian taghuts.

The Prophet is endangered because

The message of the Prophet is endangered.

The ummah, followers of the Prophet, are endangered,

That is, you are endangered.

Your liberty, your life and your faith.

Tawhid is endangered.

Fear.

Fear the evil of the three taghuts.

Take refuge in the Lord, Master and Diety of the people.

There are three taghuts and one Iblis, one Cain. Fear

"From the evil of the slinking whisperers which brings

Harm to the intellect

For it is the return of clandestine deceit.

Who *whispers in the breasts of people,*

Tempts the inner nature of unconscious people

From among jinn and people.

Who is a *waswas*? What is it?

Dictionaries give its meaning as:

Tempters and also a disease which appears after the prevalence of melancholy and destroys the mind. Melancholy . As well as evil deeds. Malicious thinking or absurdity or emptiness which penetrates into the soul of the human being and then is blown into the unconsciousnesses of people.

Whatever inspires you, falls into your unconsciousness, comes to you, talks to you, unheard by your ears, unseen by your eyes.

What is this *waswas*, this melancholy, the tempter which brings harm to the mind and damages consciousness of self?

It is *khanas*.

What is *khanas*.

Dictionairies define it:

Any element which diverts you, attaches you to itself, causes you to vanish, covers and conceals you in itself, keeps you within itself, imprisons you, pursues you like an eagle which pursues its prey. It is hidden, a concealer, a tricky and deceitful element which is after you, always playing tricks on you. It has continuous deceitful contacts with you. It does not leave you alone. It comes and goes. If you expel it, it returns again. What does this satanic temptation do? It projects *waswasah*.

What is *waswasah*?

Dictionaries define it as: the element which contaminates you with evil or emptiness, which carries neither profit nor value, neither benefit nor blessing. It is solely only absurdity, emptiness, whatever brings harm to the intellect of the human being and leads that person into delirium, makes a person speak incoherently, senselessly; it strikes one agaze, dumb, metamorphorsized and alien to the self in one's human soul.

What is the quality of this tempter ; who is *khanas* (satan)?

Which brings temptation?

It is both of jinn and human being.

Jinn? An invisible creature. An unseen, hidden power. A power which penetrates, penetrates into humanity but is neither human nor visible.

Alas! How true it is and how clear! And today, more clear than any previous time, more harsh than ever, tragic.

Those three taghuts are hidden and manifest. They leave, change color and return. They are defeated, yet raise their heads again.

Today in the capitalistic and machine-age system , where neo-colonialism dominates through hidden colonialism, in the conspiracy of the metamorphization of cultural colonialism, sickened by the colonial-toxication, advanced techniques and brain washing, those three taghuts more tragically than ever are occupied with metamorphosizing the human being.

Look at what Shandel says: "The great tragedy for the human being of today is not the explosion of the atomic bomb but rather the transfiguration and metamorphosis of human essence. Claiming the humanness of the human species! They are, with great speed, creating a new type of phenomenon which is no longer a human being, but rather, a pseudo-human machine which neither God nor nature created...it is a slave who does not know its master, does not see him, is free and strives only to become a slave. He can be bought with gold but he pays the price himself. He waits in a long line beside the thief's house until the turn of plundering him comes for he undertook great efforts to be in this line! He will no longer grow; he will be moulded. He can now have everything but in return for that, he loses everything. He only believes in the melancholic religion. In ths state of melancholia, that which he pays is always more costly than what is given in return. Before his birth, he had been determined. He does not live, rather, he is installed. He has found the chance to gallop until the end of the universe but he loses God and humanness forever."

A more frightening tragedy than can be imagined.

The genus of primordial nature is being transfigured.

Those three taghuts no longer tempt with just force of blade, power of gold and deceit of the tasbih; today, coercion and gold have employed the extraordinary, deceitfulness, darkening and destructive power of science, the astonishing magic of art and the gigantic power of technique, as well.

Today necks are being freed from enchainment but the people of the world are being internally enchained. They are free to place a vote in a box, in favor of whoever they like, but the satan of jinn and men had previously cast the vote in their hearts.

The tragedy of today is the tragedy of alienation. What does it mean to be alienated? An alienated person is a person whose human essence, whose true character and whose consciousness of self have been covered over and sit in place of self; whose intellect has been harmed. Political dictatorship, social discrimination, the savage exploitation of the ancient West have been driven away but all have returned more harsh than before in the shape of the capitalist system, hidding itself under the disguise of liberalism and democracy.

Slavery, serfdom and savage plunders of the Mongols and Ghengis Khan, enslavement of nations by the savage, ancient regimes of the Timurid and Il-Khanid times have been drived from the East. Yet all have returned more metamorphosized and destructive than before in the form of colonialism, hidden in the disguise of modernization and civilization; military executioners, hired professional assassins of the old colonialism have moved away from the Third World and have returned in the name of economic order, political regime, social relationships, the philosophy of education and training, culture, art, ethics, freedom of sex, the ideology of emptiness and absurdity, the blowing of witchcraft, propaganda, incantation of the blowers of the press, obsession with literature, art and mode...in dutiful treaties, traditional relationships, attachments of faith and the melancholy of nihilism, insanity of culture-toxication, the worship of consumption, worship of sex and the worship of the West...in the invisible dress of neo-colonialism, appearing not in military bases, behind desks, in the streets and bazaar, in the form of human beings but in hidden and unseen hands, invisible powers and relationships in the foundation of economics, the social order, in the depth of thought, ideology, institutions, symbols and styles, the social relationships, spirit, emotion and ethics, value, vote and human intellect which have infiltrated like jinn.

During these fourteen centuries there has been no era which could interpret these miraculous verses as our era can.

Throughout five hundred centuries of mankind's fate on earth, never before has the khanas made the human being its hidden and manifest victims as in our era; never before have such temptations, consciously or unconscioulsy, drawn the hearts of people to destruction.

Yea. Never have these last miraculous, eloquent verses of revelation been so explicitly exigized!

The intellectual of today who knows this century; the conscious sociologist of today who knows capitalism and neo-colonialism, can clearly see: how, for the sake of a handkerchief of the Caesar, a fire is lit in the palace; how, with the miracle of science, counterfeit is made; how in the name of civilization, ignorance is created; how satanic tempters and magic blowers deprive people of their culture, faith, consciousness and empty them of their free will from within — make them absurd; empty the human being of the 'self' and alienated with the self so humanity will become the tools of imitation and people simply the mouth of consumption and nothing more.

The conscious humanist of today who is not enclosed in the narrow moulds of tribe and traditions, who is not preoccupied in local problems and historical prejudices or the straightened circumstances of guilds, training and heritage, whose glance does not slide solely on the surface of political events, is not busied with temporary appearances, making simple and quick evaluations of daily phenomena, evident relationships, pleased with simple solutions, rather, under all that occurs in the layers of this age, he sees the human being and realizes what goes on inside. He can understand that the colonialism of nations, capitalism, class exploitation, the igniting of war, massacres of millions and millions, economic colonialism, plundering material resources and natural resources of the world of the poor, plunderings and plunderings, domination of executionist elements over the destiny of nations, abolishment of human rights...

All, yea. But these are all external tragedies. Political, military, economic, national, legal tragedies...the most frightening tragedy is the tragedy of humanity, the tragedy which penetrates the inner being of people. Those tragedies are ones mentioned in the Quran in the previous verse, the governing evil of the dark night, the evil of blowers, the evil of those who are evil, psychotic, treacherous elements and it is because of this, they were regarded as unimportant. The most dreadful tragedy is the tragedy which threatens the species of humanity and the natural substance of people of the world with metamorphization, the tragedy of the alienation of a person's essence. It is the tragedy of changing a human being to other than a human being; it is the tragedy of temptation! Temptations like those three evils do not harm the existence of human beings, the essence of the human being is wounded. It is because of this tragedy that the wounded and aware conscience of the real intellectual today moans and cries out.

Yea. It is he who sees who the satans of the people are. It is he who realizes who those satans' jinn are.

Because it is he alone who knows the meaning of temptation and feels the extent and depth of the tragedy of the temptation of the life of the human being, he turns away from the killing of human rights for the truth of the human being is also killed.

It is he who knows that the satan – the constant idol-carver, everywhere and in every place, is not a human factor. Sometimes it is a devil and sometimes it is a mysterious power. Sometimes it is covered and hidden. It does not always place the bridle of captivity around the necks; it tempts from inside. Quietly, covered, it steps inside the human being; it infiltrates your essence, your personality, your humanness, your 'youness', penetrates and sits instead of your 'self'; it makes you insane; it harms your intellect; it jinn-toxicates you, alienates you.

Yea. A danger more frightening than ever lies in ambush for you, not only in the ambush of mountains or behind rocks but in the ambush of your heart, in your chest, behind the layers of your mind, not only in ambush for your life, your property, but in ambush for your humanness, in ambush for your faith, your ummah, your understanding, your consciousness, your love, your victory, the achievements of your jihad, the jihad of your generation, the heritage of your history, upon the course of your becoming Abraham, in the migration of your becoming Divine-like.

Your enemy is not always armed or an army. It is not always external, not always apparent. Sometimes it is a system. Sometimes it is an emotion. Sometimes it is a thought; sometimes it is a possession; sometimes it is a method of life; sometimes it is a method of work; some - times it is a way of thinking; sometimes it is a tool of work; sometimes it is in the form of productivity; sometimes it is a kind of consumption; sometimes it is a culture of life; sometimes it is cultural colonialism, religious deception; sometimes it is class exploitation; sometimes it is the mass media; sometimes it is the invisible propaganda of a spider-like network; sometimes it is the world of a new life; sometimes it is bureaucracy, technocracy and automation; sometimes it is chauvinism, nationalism or racism; sometimes it is the egotism of Nazism, the gold diggers of the bourgeoisie or militarism's love of coercion; sometimes it is the worship of pleasure, of epicurianism; sometimes it is the worship of a subjective idealism or the worship of the objective of materialism or the worship of beauty of art, the worship of sentiments of romanticism, the tendency towards absurd existentialism; sometimes it is the Sufic worship of the spirit; the monk-like worship of asceticism; the racist worship of earth and lineage; the fascist worship of heroes and government; individualism's worship of the individual; socialism's worship of the collective; communism's worship of economics; philosophy's worship of the intellect; gnosis' worship of feelings; spirituality's worship of heaven; materialism's worship of the world; idealism's worship of imaginings; realism's worship of what exists; the pre-destination of fate's worship of the law; the predeterminism of destiny's will. Sometimes it is Freudism's love of sex; sometimes epicurian's love of the stomach; sometimes biology's worship of instincts; sometimes kufr's love of this world; sometimes religious worship of the Hereafter; even reckless scientism's worship of science!

These are the idols of the new multitheism, Lat, Uzza, Isaf and Na'ilah of the new Quraysh, three hundred and sixty idols, the Ka'bah of this civilization!

It is here that you realize what the worship of God is.

How broad is the meaning and greatness of the mission of monotheism!

You see that the human being today who says he has switched from devotion to reason and has freed self from religion with the power of science and human liberty not only does not worship God but he has only destroyed monotheism, not worship and servitude. The new multitheism has greater numbers as well as inferior gods in comparison to the old multitheism during the time of the Age of Ignorance. At the time of the Age of Ignorance, savage Arabs worshippped artistic and beautiful statues studden with gems, built of gold or red rubies. It was the manifestation of power, beauty, perfection, blessing and welfare. It was the god of art, the powers of nature, angels, lords and fictious personalities but from the beyond and sacred. And today, the beloved of the religion of the new multitheism had decreased to the lowest of the low of the genital organ, the most inferior organ of the human body.

Thus the constant taghuts who exist everywhere today, create injustices more than ever and every place the Pharaoh of today is a system. The Karun of today is a class and Balam b. Ba'ur has taken off the clothes of religion and put on the clothes of science, ideology and art.

How amazing! In the next to the last surah, the Quran speaks of three evils but stresses the One Quality of God, the Daybreak!

And in the last surah it speaks about one evil and three Qualities, Lord, King and Diety.

Those three evils are external tragedies of anti-human powers which disregard his rights. And this one evil is an internal tragedy which kills the truth. The sovereignity of the dark night, the thought-destroying blowers and the losses of traitors who blow, kill, plunder and trample upon human rights and human liberties, who nourish people's poverty, captivity and ignorance,. however, at any rate, the human being remains under the destruction of these tragedies. But the real tragedy is this that these anti-human powers today, more than ever before, empty the human being from the inside and paralyze his human values in order to dominate, plunder and exploit. Because the experience of history has taught the triple powers that in order to economically and politically enslave a class, nation, and people, one must, at the beginning, put a person into human captivity and silencing that person from within, make the institutions of a person's primordial nature, sick, metamorphosized. This is the evil which is more frightening than the other three evils. Even though evil forces are the same every place, but in the system of the triple rule, the harm which is càused to the human primordial nature of a human being, a tragedy which causes fear in the conscious conscience of a human being today, is that very satan (khanas), the enemy of the people who comes and goes every place in three visages and every time in a different disguise.

Temptation is a people-killing tragedy and a position which this three-headed, one hundred visaged snake injects into the human being. Was it not that Iblis, in the disguise of a snake, deceived Adam and caused him to be expelled from God's paradise?

The evil of *waswasah,* temptation, is born of those three evils, the omnious performer of the taghut is khanas. The Quran teaches us in its last message that the evil which is much more tragic than the other three evils is the temptations of satan (*waswasah-i-khanas*) itself which are a tragedy caused by those three taghuts of multitheism and that these temptations are more wicked and lethal than that of those three taghuts of multitheism. In order to destroy these three-fold powers which take the human being into captivity, plunder and perversion, only Divine-like consciousness of self is sufficient; the night must be split by the blade of daybreak. But for the Iblis-like power of satan which infiltrates into the essence of people and turns them into the tempted *waswas,* one must take refuge in monotheism. It is with the unity of the three powers of Lordship, Kingship and Divinity in the Essence of God alone that one can uproot the foundation of the trinity in human nature and human society as well. One can then lay the foundation for an Abelian society based upon social and human unity built from a unique monotheistic soul in the world view of monotheism. It is then that the model ummah should be developed, an ummah which invites, knowing Abraham's mission and the sealing of it. The responsibility for its foundation is laid upon the shoulders of the people.

Today people have felt the tragedy. We who are the heirs of Abraham in the world should teach the conscious, struggling and justice-seeking generation of today the mission of salvation of the people of the world which stands on the verge of final extinction. The Quran, the family of 'Ali and the hajj have made our responsibility extremely heavy.

The dark night, now, more overspread, rules everywhere in the world; magician blowers exist who are more powerful and more concealed than at any time before. Everywhere the sovereignity of the human being over the self is today weaker than in all other eras. The temptations of satan — either from jinn or men — are stronger and more tragic today.

O who stand in the Station of Abraham and upon whose shoulders the seal of revelation has placed the heavy duty of the mission upon your shoulders!

O conscious human being! Vice-gerent of God! Heir to the Prophets! O who must adopt the Prophet as a symbol for yourself so that people can adopt you as their own symbol! O responsible for building the ummah, followers of the religion of the Book, scale and iron!

O arisen for equity upon the earth! O enemy of the tyrant, friend of the oppressed! O Muslim mujahid!

Respond to the call of the deprived of the earth who are the leaders of the time, heirs of the world and tomorrow's history, for the world has been filled with the tyranny of Sufyani tyrants, with the oppression of the Karun-like hoarders of wealth, with the appearance of a blind-folded conspiracy of a one-eyed anti-Savior and the arising for the promised salvation, revenger, Truth, justice and peace at the end of time has begun to show its signs in the depths of the conscience of the anguished masses and responsible intellectuals.

O he who has developed his Divine-like self himself! Heir of the Prophets, superior to the Prophets of the Israelite tribes! Muhammad-like individual who must bear witness to the Truth of time and must be the symbol of the masses of the world, a righteous servant of God who must be Divine-like in this nature! O born of uprighteousness who returns from the circumambulation of love , the search for water, the stations of awareness, consciousness and love, the stoning of the trinity of multitheism, and the sacrifice of Isma'il, carrying the salvation bearing banner of the monotheism of Abraham, the message of the Quran and the sword — Dhulfaqar — of 'Ali and who has brought as a gift, a pitcher of water from Zamzam as a gift, before you return to your home and begin your daily life, stop for a moment and think about your faith, your covenant. Take a look at yourself, your age, your generation, the countenance of the earth and the face of your contemporary human being. Listen to the cry of the awakened consciences of the world, how they mourn from the evil of satan's temptations.

Toynbee sees human civilization threatened by an internal enemy, the mad and unaccountable rush for consumption, consumption and consumption.

Marcuse has warned that the human being has become one-dimensional, like a tool.

Eric Fromm, Diogenes-like, searches hopelessly around this town with an extinguished light for an aware human being. Camus cries out, "The plague has spread into the town of Oran, the civilized city-state of its age, and innocent children have died in the temple of this city from a mysterious, frightening disease without even knowing why." Jean Isole speaks about an armed prince who is fully prepared and decorated with gold but suffers from an intolerable and mysterious disease which has no medical cure!

The conscious carvers of Holland have created the figure of a man in the center of the new built town of Rotterdam which has firmness of stone but its joints are so separated that it is as if it were about to fall.

Eliot and Joyce have taken a Greek goddess from mythology, the goddess being hermaphrodite, neither man nor woman, and have created it as the god of today's humanity.

And Eugene Ionesco shows the human tragedy in whom satan has infiltrated and turned into a rhinoceros.

Kafka has illustrated the horrible and pitiful portrait of a human being who was supposed to be the representative of God in nature and who God created similar to His Divinity and has revealed how he has been metamorphorsized.

Yea. The image of Dorian Grey is not the image of Oscar Wilde. It is the image of the alienated human being of today.

*

Escape at daybreak , you conscious victim of tragedy! As the dark night overspreads everywhere, artful enchanters blow in difficulties.

So those with complexes of envy have become playthings of night magicians and friends with enmity inside.

Take refuge in the Lord of Daybreak.

For it splits the nape of night and lets flow the white stream of morning over this love, this faith.

Fear.

Those three taghtus have returned, wearing disguises, well-skilled and with an endless army and hidden weapon. O avenger of the blood of your father! Heir of Abel!

Cain has not died.

Heir of Adam! Before whom the angels prostrated themselves.

Iblis will take revenge. Keep away from this three-faced tempter of seventy colors and seventy thousand traps who protects temptation.

Who whispers inside the masses.

Be alert! Take refuge in God – Muhammad-like – in the Lord of Daybreak, Lord of the people, King of the people, Beloved of the people, and you, O pilgrim!

After the 'id

Stay in Mina.

Everyday regularly stone the three taghuts in sequence, seven times and each time, seven stones, every day is a *tashrigh* , every month, Dhihajjah, every land is Mina and human being, history and...

Life is the hajj.

Conclusion

Now the pause in Mina has ended. The hajj has been completed behind the walls of Makkah.

You have another circumambulation and endeavor left (*tawaf al-nisa'*). It is said that you can perform this until the end of Dhihajjah, whenever you desire an, even if necessary, perform it before 'Arafat!

Thus, the hajj has ended.

The hajj was all of this.

Now, O you who leave Mina, you have passed the last phase of the hajj.

And you have disconnected your futile and repetitious individual life in season through Abraham's invitation; you have arrived in the appointed place as ordered by the Commander of Revelation. You have changed the dress of your individual life into the white dress of death. You have stepped off of your carpet in jihad and onto the carpet of God as a guest in the land of faith. You have pledged your allegiance to the Right Hand of God; have drowned 'self' in the whirlpool of love; have negated 'self' in the circumambulating masses; have arrived at your 'self', being cleansed of the dust of life and, little by little, of the rust of your 'self'; have arisen out of the whirlpool; have endeavored in the wonderous and thirsty mountains searching for water; then, have fallen, all at once from Makkah to 'Arafat; from there, station by station, you have returned to

God. You have collected weapons in consciousness under the brilliant sun of knowledge; have gathered arms in consciousness during the reign of darkness and the dissimulation of night; have passed the frontier of Mina in harmony with time and company of the congregation; have attacked and in the first attack, have destroyed the last base. Then freed, you have released the land of faith and love from the sovereignity of Iblis. You have attained the station of Abraham, have ascended to the peak higher than martyrdom and, at the end, you have sacrificed a sheep.

Where do you go? What do you do? What have you attained at the termination of the greatest spiritual journey, having attained the place of the highest ascent of the human being, having passed through the most perilous places, displaying creation: monotheism (tawhid), self-sacrifice (ithar), jihad, martyrdom, battle against Iblis, victory over the station of love? What do you do?

Slaughter. Slaughter a sheep. Why? What is the philosophy behind this? What is the secret? What is the purpose of slaughtering a sheep? Finally, what is the hajj which speaks of total faith?

I dare not speak. It is unbelievable for us and our religious spirit.

Let God Himself answer and reveal the reason why: *"So eat thereof and feed the abased poor."*(22:28) Feed the silent, poor man and oppressed seeker of justice. And again, *"and feed the needy, the supplicant."* (22:36) This means: fight poverty. At the end of the way, help a hungry man, help an oppressed person with some of what you eat. That is all!

The Return

O haj! Where are you going now? Towards your home? The world? Are you leaving the hajj as you had come? Never!

O you who, in secret, played the role of Abraham in this scene.

A good actor or actress is dissolved in the personality whose role he or she is playing. If you have played your role well, the scene will end, but not your work. Some artists have never left the role they had in the scene, and have died with it.

And you, O you who had to play the role of Abraham, not in jest but in worship, with love, do not leave the House of God and simply return to your own home; do not return from the role of Abraham to the role of self.

Do not leave the House of the People. Do not again restrict yourself. Do not leave the ihram; do not put on your own clothes!

Return from Mina to Makkah with your ‘Isma‘il’.

You are Abraham, history's great idol-destroyer, the founder of monotheism in the world, who carried the mission to guide the people upon his shoulders, the ‘patient-rebellious’, the ‘rebel-guide’, a Prophet: anguish in his soul; love in his heart; enlightened mind and...an axe in his hand.

The manifestation of faith arising from out of the heart of infidelity (kufr); they gyser of monotheism (tawhid) arising from out of the swamp of multitheism (shirk).

Abraham – the idol destroyer of mankind's tribe – from the home of Azar – the idol-carver of his tribe!

The idol-destroyer, Nimrod-destructor, crusher of ignorance and tyranny; the enemy of sleep; the rebel against the tranquility of humiliation and the security of oppression; the leader of a tribe; the pioneer of the Movement: life, motion, direction, idea, hope, faith and monotheism.

You are Abraham! Step into the midst of the fire – the fire of tyranny, ignorance – in order to save humanity from the fire – the fire of tyranny, ignorance.

The fire which is part of the destiny of each responsible human being, responsible for illumination and salvation.

But the God of monotheism turns the fire of Nimrodians into a red rose for the Abrahamians!

You will not be burned. You will not turn into ashes. The purpose was that you move through jihad by going towards...the fire.

So that the 'self' is offered in moving to save the masses from the fire,

Until the most painful of martyrdoms.

You are Abraham! Sacrifice your Isma'il with your own two hands. Place your knife at his throat.

In order to remove the knife from the throat of the masses, the masses who have continuously been slaughtered at the feet of palaces of power built from plundered treasures and at the threshold of deceiving, humiliating temples, place the blade against the throat of your own Isma'il so that you gain the power to take the blade away from the executioner.

But...the God of Abraham Himself pays the ransom for all Isma'ils.

You do not kill. You do not lose your Isma'il. The purpose is to move in the Way of Faith to the point where you have sacrificed your Isma'il with both hands.

Until ...more painful than martyrdom.

And now, O you who have come from the circumambulation of love, you are standing at the Station of Abraham; you have reached the Station of Abraham!

And when Abraham had reached here, he had passed the many phases of his eventful life from the breaking of idols, the destroying of Nimrod, the bearing of torture, the suffering of the fire, the struggling against Iblis, the sacrificing of Isma'il and...migrations, wanderings, lonelinesses, tortures and passing from prophethood to imamate. *"Behold, I make you an Imam for the people."* (2:124)

From individuality to the congregation; from being the son of the house of Azar, the idol-carver, to becoming the founder of the House of Monotheism!

And now, he stands here, the snow of age upon his head, at the end of a life which resembles a history, appointed to build the House, to install the Black Stone, the Hand of God in the House of God; and his partner – Isma'il – who carries stones and hands them to his father. While standing upon this stone, his father lays the foundation of the House and builds it!

O wonder! Isma'il and Abraham are building the Ka'bah; Isma'il and Abraham – one passed through the fire and the other, the altar of sacrifice. Now, both are agents of God, responsible for the masses, architects of the most ancient temple of monotheism upon the earth, the first House of the People in history, the House of the Free, liberty, the Ka'bah of love, worship, a sanctuary, a mystery among the mysteries of the tent of 'cover, chastity and the angelic world'.

And now you are standing in the Station of Abraham, stepping in the footprint of Abraham, upon the last step of the ladder of Abraham's descent, at the highest peak of Abraham's *miraj* , in the closest distance of Abraham to nearness...

The Station of Abraham!

And you, the founder of the Ka'bah, the architect of the House of Freedom, the founder of monotheism, responsible, lover, aware, idol-destroyer, leader of the tribes, opposed to Nimrod's oppression, in combat against the ignorance of multitheism, in jihad against the temptations of Iblis, the satan (khanas) who places temptation in the breasts of the people.

Bearing homelessness, anguish, danger, fire and the slaughter of your Isma'il; and now, no longer a House for your 'self' or a base for your 'Isma'il' but a House for the People, a shelter for the shelterless, a place secure for those pursued, the fugitives, the injurded, the hunted who, bloodied and in fear, wander the earth, frightened and wounded; who find no shelter as everywhere Nimrod is in pursuit.

A torch in this dark and longest night of the winter solistice.

A cry on this night of tyranny.

A sanctuary, secure, clean and free for humanity, for the Family of God – the people – because everywhere disgrace and insecurity rule. They have made the earth into a grand house of prostitution, a place of murder, where every deed is forbidden except aggression and discrimination. O you who appear in Abraham's role, who stand in Abraham's Station, who stand upon the footstep of Abraham and who give the hand of allegiance to the Hand of Abraham's God:

Live like Abraham and in your own age, be the architect of the Ka'bah of faith. Move your people out from the stagnant swamp of life, from the dead-like living, from the quiet sleep of the abasement of tyranny and from the darkness of ignorance; give them direction; call them to the hajj; circumambulate.

And you, O ally of God! O in step with Abraham! O you who have come from the circumambulation, you who have ended your desire with the *tawaf al-nisa'* , you who have come from the annihilation of 'self' in the circumambulating masses! You who have emerged in the shape of Abraham, who are standing in the place of the architect of the Ka'bah, founder of the sacred city, the Masjid al-Haram, and face to face with your ally – God!

Make your land a sacred area
For you are in the sacred area.
Make your age a sacred time
For you are in the sacred time.
Make the earth into a sacred mosque
For you are in the Masjid al-Haram.
For 'the earth is God's mosque',
And you see that:
It is not.

Notes: A Word to the Reader

1. Perhaps this note is useful that the word, religious, here, has been used in its historic and social sense as 'the science of religion' which then applies to every school and invitation which has a religious aspect, whether it be a philosophical, scientific, political or religious school and an invitation , whether it has metaphysical roots or not, because a discussion about the rightfulness of a religion is the work of theosophy and theology in each religion and I am not presently in such a position to do so.

2.And clearer than that is the interpretation of a person who, in history, better than any Islamologist knows Islam and can foresee the destiny of Islamic history clearer and more consciously than any sociologist and has better interpretations than any artist or lecturer – 'Ali – because that which Islamic specialists and sociologists wish to express about their scientific analysis of the history of Islam at their conferences and lecturers and compare the truth of the beginning Islam and its present realities and speak about the constructive mission of that and the destructive role of this and even express Islam from the colorations and emotions of the aware and responsible intellectuals in the past and in the present and compare them and enlighten the beauties and allurements of that Islam with the uglinesses and hatred-nourishing of this Islam and even announce this particularity that Islam is an exceptional religion, other than all religions in which category it is placed and then later, also a degenerated religion, it is exceptional, other than all other religions which have degenerated or have been made to degenerate and now, the beginning Islam was the most beautiful and most alluring of the schools and invitations and in the course of its changing and degeneration, has become the ugliest and most hated and as I said: the highest and most elevated school of thought and the most progressive mission for humanity has been altered into the most degenerate of schools and the most hated of missions in the world...with a simple, natural allusion from the life of the people and expressed in a few words, precisely, beautifully and completely, "Islam is like a lamb's skin coat which is worn in reverse!" The lamb's skin coat is something to wear but it differs from all other clothes in material, form and use. And the lamb's skin coat is the only coat whose outside is the most beautiful, the most artistic and attractive and its inside is the ugliest and most disgusting. The lamb's skin coat, containing the most designs, when worn inside out, becomes like something a monster would wear to frighten children (do you not see how children flee from this Islam?) A person wears a lamb's skin coat inside out and a sheep the other way around!

3.As an example, the 28th of Safar which is the day of the death of the Holy Prophet as well as that of Imam Hasan [the 2nd Shi'ite Imam]. But normally in the remembrance ceremonies for the Imam, it happens less often that the Prophet is mentioned! Islam without the Quran and without the Prophet, it is really a fine keddle of fish!

4.The reason why a pilgrimage to Madinah is stressed during the hajj and as a Tradition of the Holy Prophet states, "Whosoever goes on the hajj and does not make a pilgrimage to me in Madinah has oppressed me," is, in my opinion, that in the hajj, where you learn monotheism and you come to know Abraham, in Madinah, learn of Islam and come to know the Prophet of Islam who is the continuer of the history of Abraham and the completer of the mission of monotheism and you in Madinah, follow up the lesson of the hajj to complete the school of the hajj. Otherwise, the Prophet is the most needless of all to anticipate your or my pilgrimage and Islam, also, knows him to be more logical and serious than for that which bears no fruit in life and is ineffective in the mind to give a reward on the Day of Judgment and that an action have a spiritual reward which is neither a service to the people nor for one's self.

Notes: Part One

1.Allamah Tabatabaie is of the opinion that the vice-gerency and learning of the Names was not particular to the Prophet Adam and his children have a share in them. (See *al-mizan*, vol. 1).

2."God created Adam in His image." A Tradition of the Holy Prophet. See *Asrar al-hakam*, p. 225.

3. "The heart of a believer is the Throne of God and the Throne of Mercy." See *Asrar al-hakam*, p. 226.

4. *"And indeed We did try those before them..."* (29:3) *"That God may prove who helps Him and His Prophets in secret."* (57:25) *"That We may test them as to which of them is best in behavior."* (18:7) *"Who created life and death that He may try you (to prove) which of you is best in deeds."* (67:2)

5. We see that the image of the hajj, as opposed to what it shows it to be today and we see it as being, is the image of a people and not the aristocrats! The answer to this invitation, in the first place, are people on foot and in the second place, are riders, but not riders upon war horses nor the ornamented bridled aristocrat's horse but rather pilgrims on lean camels, a class which their beast of burden describes!

Does this not show that as opposed to what we might think today, the image of the hajj is not that of a captialist nor those wealty from having collected religious taxes and 'having ability' is a logical and common issue, not a class or economic one. This image of the aristocrat going on the hajj is an image presented for Iran [of the Shah] because the Holy Quran always refers to the hajj, the pilgrims and the House of the Ka'bah in terms which show that not only is it not class-oriented but it is completely of the people and even anti-class, with particularities which are anti-aristocrat. Even in the verse, *"And proclaim unto the people the hajj..."* (22:27), the answer that those who were called to the hajj give shows their class and it is clear from the hajis from other Islamic countries who go on the hajj that they are fulfilling their religious duty and they believe 'being able' to mean, 'having the financial ability to undertake the hajj' not 'going to the hajj to increase their financial facilities'.

In our past literature, as well, a haji is presented as a lover of his faith not the visage of the haji today which is one of a person who is 'worldly'. I think that the two characteristics of 'wealthy' and 'haji' are the results of that very Safavid metamorphization because they expressed the terms 'Mashhadi' [a person who has been on a shrine to Mashhad, the tomb of Imam Rida, peace be upon him, the eighth Shi'ite Imam] or 'Karbali' [a person who has been on a pilgrimage to Karbala, the place of the tomb of Imam Husayn, peace be upon him, the third Shi'ite Imam]. They propagated the idea that a circumambulation around the tomb of the Imams is much more rewarding than a circumambulation around the Ka'bah. The use of the word 'circumambulation' itself around a tomb is full of meaning and its use in the above sense shows to what extent the insight, spirit, characteristics and culture of the language of monotheism has been dispersed in the name of imamate in order to open the door for political and class multitheism.

6. *"To God is the eventual coming."* (35:18) That is 'becoming' transformation, change, movement in essence, in substance and this means, as opposed to what philosophers and logicians say, the human being is not a permanent essence. The logical definition is illogical. The human being is not 'being' but 'becoming', that is, continual change and movement which is continuously 'creatively becoming' and the person himself or herself is the creator.

7. " موتوا قبل ان تموتوا ": حديث

8. In the amazing and wonderous surah shams, God Almighty swears by the sun, the moon, the day, the night, heaven , earth and the soul (the 'self' of the 'self'). It announces that the soul, the real and primordial self of a person is like a seed and a person, the farmer. *"He will be successful who purifies it,"* (91:9) and *"he who corrupts it will indeed fail."* (91:10)

Notes: Part Two

1. It has been recorded in Safi under 9:3 and in *Kafi* and 'Ayyashi that Imam Sadiq, peace be upon him, said, "The greater hajj is the pause after 'Arafat and the stoing of the idols and the lesser hajj is the umrah."

2. See 35:18.

3. This expression comes from the Holy Quran's description of the human being where it speaks of Noah's son. Addressing Noah who seeks intercession and forgiveness for his son to no avail for the Holy Quran says, *"He is not from your family; he has committed unrighteous deeds."*

4. The forbidden which many Traditions and commentaries refer to as being 'knowledge' as well. As to its special meaning, among other assumed ones, I had accepted this and I now accept it but not in the sense of its direct meaning but its potential one. The forbidden fruit or tree which Islamic commentators have expressed from the lowest meaning of jealousy, greed and whims to the highest meaning of the knowledge of the *ahl al-bayt* and the station of leadership and they even attempted to determine what kind of tree and fruit it was which some say was wheat or an apple or...I believe very simply and directly that the forbidden tree means the tree which forbids and eating the forbidden fruit or in the words of the Holy Quran, *"moving close to the forbidden tree"* means aggressing beyond limits, to trample upon the life of a creature upon the earth, that is, in one word, 'rebellion' which contains two elements: consciousness and freedom.

5. These two words *nazar* and *basirat*, I use in the sense that the Holy Quran uses them where *nazar* is used in relation to natural, material phenomena, *"Will they not consider (yanzarun) how the camel was created,"* (88:17) and *basirat* is used in reference to seeing inner truths, *"I call to God with sure knowledge (basirah), I and who-*

ever follows after me." (12:108)

6. Abraic

7. The meaning of *jabr* is determinism. That is, all things, the world, the human being and time must follow determined laws and every phenomena is an amount or limit and I believe this is what the Holy Quran is referring to when it refers to *taqdir* or *qad ma'lum* or *ajal masmi*.

8.. "من اصبح ولم يهتم بامور المسلمين، فليس بمسلم"

9. Look at how the Holy Quran expresses itself! Everywhere Iblis is described as being dangerous and here it says that satan's tricks are weak. Why? Because here it is referring to deadly weapons and is speaking to mujahids. It is because of this that I expressed the system of oppressors not as steel chains but as the spider's web. It is wonderous that one of the surahs of the Holy Quran is called "The Spider" (29). It speaks about the story of the Messengers who were alone who undertook the jihad against the despotic powers ruling over the people and the ignorance of the condemned peoples and with empty hands they destroyed all of the palaces of oppression and temples of witchcraft because all of these powers who supported everything which was other than God were built upon multitheism and bullies who were arrogant in their lands and made the people sacrifices of deprivation. The Holy Quran calls this power a spider and its system, a spider's web! It is woven in such a way to cause the masses to fall into it and be captured and then it (the trinity) sucks their blood. But in spite of all of this, it is weak. If it succeeds, it is not because it is strong nor is it because people are weak but because they bear ignorance. It is sufficient if the people 'know'. That which the Holy Prophet offered his tribe was not weapons but a message; it was not power but wisdom, consciousness of self, 'light'. *"The parable of those who take protectors apart from God is like the parable of the spider that makes itself a house and surely the frailest of houses is*

the house of the spider, did they but know." (29:41) *"And (as for) these examples, We set forth for men and none understand them but the learned."* (29:43)

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Appendix One: A Biographical Sketch of Ali Shariati

(1933-1977)

November 23, 1933	Born in Mazinan, Sabzivar, Khorasan Province
1940	Enters school
1950	Enters Teachers' College in Mashhad
1952	Teaches in the village of Ahmadabad, near Mashhad
1955	Writes *Maktab-i-Vasitah* Translates *Abu Dharr Ghaffari*
1956	Enters the Faculty of Letters of Mashhad University Writes a series of articles entitled "Toynbee and History" for the Khorasan newspaper Writes an article entitled "Which one am I?" for the *Farhang* magazine in Mashhad
1957	As a member of the National Resistance Movement, he, along with his father and other members is arrested in Mashhad and sent to the Qazil Qaleh prison for 6 months
1959	He translates *Supplications* by Alexis Carrel He receives his B.A. from Mashhad University, Faculty of Letters and as he was at the top of his class, he should have been

	sent to France, but difficulties are encountered
1960	He translates *Optimism and Pessimism* by John Isolah and it is printed in the magazine of Quds (Khorasan) province
	The difficulty is somehow solved and he is sent to France. In France, he studies two majors, Sociology and the History of Religions
	Joins the Algerian Liberation Movement and is very active
	"What should we lean upon?", an article he wrote is published in one of the French magazines
1961	"What is poetry?" translated from Sartre and printed in Paris
	Because of his activities in the Algerian Liberation Movement, he is arrested in Paris and sent to the City Prison where he holds an interview with Givz which is printed in Togo in 1965
1962	He publishes an article in Paris entitled "The Death of Franz Fannon"
	After receiving two Ph. D.'s in the fields of Sociology and the History of Religions, he returns to Iran. He is arrested on the Irano-Turkish border in Bazargan

	and he spends several months in the Qazil Qalah prison
1965	He works as a high school teacher in a village near Mashhad and then teaches in a school in the city. Finally, he is hired as an assistant professor by Mashhad University
1967-73	He begins to lecture in Mashhad, the Husayniyyah Irshad in Tehran, Tehran University and other centers and universities in Tehran and other cities and this is the most productive period of his life
September, 1973	The Husayniyyah Irshad is closed and the secret police (SAVAK), try to find Shariati. As they are not successful, they arrest his father and put him in prison for more than a year. One month after his father's arrest, Shariati turns himself over to the police and spends 18 months in solitary confinement in the Komitah's prison, the Shah's prison for political prisoners which was similar to Hitler's Dachau
1975-77	He continues to live in Tehran and Mashhad but was active only at nights where he gave lectures in secret until morning in other

	people's homes so that SAVAK, the Shah's secret police, could not find him. But this type of life did not suit his enthusiastic nature, as a migrant towards God, he goes to Europe to continue his struggle against imperialism.
May 16, 1977	He migrates to Europe. After 30 days, even though he had entered London in disguise, SAVAK, with the help of the British Intelligence Service, martyred him.
June 19, 1977	He attained what God had promised him
June 27, 1977	He is buried next to Hadrat Zaynab's tomb in Damascus

Appendix Two: Sermon of Husayn ibn ‘Ali, peace be upon him, at the Hajj

Husayn ibn ‘Ali, peace be upon him, delivered the following sermon during Mu‘awiyah’s reign at the time of the hajj to a gathering of eminent personalities of the time. It shows the kinds of issues which should be discussed during the hajj.*

In the Name of God
the Merciful, the Compassionate

O people! Learn a lesson from God’s warning to His friends when He censures the rabbis and says, “*Why do the learned and the rabbis not forbid them to utter sin...*” (5:53) and “*those who disbelieved from among the children of Israel were cursed...surely evil were the things they did.*” (5:78-79)

God has reproached them because they beheld the open vices and corruption of the oppressors but did not forbid them from that on account of desire for their favors and fear of what endangered them whereas God says, “*So fear not the people and fear you Me.*” (5:44) And He says, “*And (as for) the believing men and the believing women, they are guardians of each other; they enjoin good and forbid evil...*” (9:71)

God mentions the duty of enjoining good and preventing evil (*al-‘amr bil ma‘ruf wa al-nahy ‘an al-munkar*) before all other duties because He knows that if it is established in society, all other duties, the easy and the difficult, will also be established. That is why enjoining good and forbidding evil signifies an invitation to Islam together with resistance against injustice, opposition to the oppressor, [proper] division of the public funds and booty, collection of alms and their correct distribution.

Then you, O company of men well-known for your learning! You, who have a good name and are known [among the people] for your good-will, God has given you honor with the people. The illustrious venerate you and the weak respect you. You are preferred by him over whom you have no merit and over whom you have no power. The deprived seek your intercession in need and you walk on the road with the majesty of kings and princes. Is it not that you have such honor and dignity because people place their hopes in you to stand for the establishment of Divine duties? If you fail to discharge most of those duties, then you have scorned the duties of leaders. You have forfeited the rights of the weak, though you have obtained your own claims. Neither did you have to sacrifice your wealth nor endanger your lives for the sake of Him Who created you. Nevertheless, you desire that God should put you in Paradise in the neighborhood of His Prophets and you hope to be safe from His chastisement.

Indeed, I am afraid that you who harbor such hopes from God shall have to taste His vengeance because God had honored you and raised you in station above others, for there are many servants of God who are not held in such high esteem as God has granted you among the people.

God's covenants are broken before your very eyes, yet you are not dismayed, although you are alarmed if some of your ancestral compacts are endangered; as if the compact of the Messenger of God were some insignificant and paltry thing!

The blind, the dumb and the handicapped in towns are without protection and mercy, but you neither act as demanded by your high station nor care and have regard for one who attends to them. You have made your own life safe and secure by getting along with the oppressors and showing lenience and connivance in regard to their injustices, which God had commanded you to oppose and forbid. Indeed if you understand, the calamity that has befallen you is greater than the one which afflicts the people; you have failed to safeguard the responsibility of the learned because the implementation of the laws and running of the affairs lie with the men of Divine knowledge, who are custodians of His [laws regarding the] *haram* and *halal.* But you have been wrested of this status. And it was not taken away from you except for your departure from righteousness and on account of your disagreement regarding the *sunnah* , after that it had been made clear and evident to you.

Had you the endurance to put up with adversities and hardships for the sake of God, the affairs of God would have returned into your hands and your lost authority would have turned to you again. But you allowed the oppressors to take your place and handed the affairs of God into their hands, that they may act dubiously and indulge in their lusts. They received their authority because of your running away from death [which is inevitable] and due to your love of life, which shall [at any rate] depart from you.

In this fashion, you submitted the weak into their hands, to be enslaved and exploited, permitting them to run the affairs of the country according to their whims, and to make ignominy their way of life through their [unchecked] desires, following the perverse and disobeying the

Almighty. They have appointed a loud-voiced orator for every pulpit in every town, and the country lies at their mercy, open and unprotected. Their hands are free to do whatever they like and the defenseless people are at the disposal of their mercy.

Among them are merciless tyrants who oppress the weak and men of authority who know neither the creation nor the Day of Resurrection. It is surprising – and why should I not be surprised – when the country is in the hands of a tyrant who lacks faith and the ruler of the believers is one who has no mercy for them. Indeed, God is a judge between us in our disputes and contentions.

My God, Thou knowest that whatever I have said is not for the sake of rivalry for power nor for the sake of futile vanities of the world, but because we desire establishment of the landmarks of Thy religion, reform in Thy lands, security of Thy oppressed creatures and the practice of Thy commands and the duties laid down by Thee.

And you, [O company of the elect of the ummah], assist us and do us due justice. The oppressors have power over you and they act to extinguish the light of your Prophet.

And God sufficies us and in Him we put our trust. Towards Him do we turn, and towards Him all things shall return.

***The translation of this sermon is quoted from *al-Tawhid*, vol. 2, no. 1, with editorial changes.**

Appendix Three: Prayer of Husayn ibn ‘Ali, peace be upon him, for the Day of Arafat

Praise belongs to God
whose decree none may avert,
and whose gift none may prevent.
No fashioner’s fashioning is like His fashioning,
and He is the Generous, the All-embracing.
He brought forth the varieties of unprecedented creatures
and perfected through His wisdom all He had fashioned.
Hidden not from Him are harbingers,
nor lost with Him are deposits.[3]
He repays every fashioner,
feathers the nest of all who are content
and has mercy upon all who humble themselves.
He sends down benefits
and the all-encompassing Book
in radiant light.
He hears supplications,
averts afflictions,
raises up in degrees,
and knocks down tyrants.
For there is no god other than He,
nothing is equal to Him,
“Like Him there is naught,
and He is the Hearing, the Seeing” (42:11)
the subtle, the Aware,
and “He is powerful over all things” (5:120)
O God, I make Thee my quest
and bear witness to Thy Lordship,
acknowledging that Thou art my Lord

and to Thee is my return.[4]
Thou originated me by Thy blessing before I was a thing remembered.[5]
Thou created me from dust,
then gavest me a place in the loins (of my fathers),
secure from the uncertainty of Fate and the vagaries of the ages and the years.
I remained a traveller from loin to womb in a time immemorial of past days
and bygone centuries.
In Thy tenderness, bounty and goodness toward me Thou didst not send me out into the empire of the leaders of disbelief, those who broke Thy covenant and cried lies to Thy messengers.[6]
Rather, Thou sentest me out to that guidance which had been foreordained for me, the way which Thou madest easy for me
and in which Thou nurtured me.
And before that Thou wert kind to me through Thy gracious fashioning
and abundant blessings.
Thou originated my creation from a sperm-drop spilled[7]
and madest me to dwell in a threefold gloom among flesh, blood and skin.[8]
Thou gavest me not to witness my creation,[9]
nor didst Thou entrust me with anything of my own affair.
Then thou sentest me out into the world for the guidance that had been foredained for me, complete and unimpaired.
Thou watched over me in the cradle
as an infant boy,
provided me with food,
wholesome milk,
and turned the hearts of the nurse-n

Thou entrusted my upbringing to compassionate mothers,
guarded me from the calamities brought by the jinn
and kept me secure from excess and lack.
High art Thou, O Merciful! O Compassionate!
Then when I began to utter speech
Thou completed for me Thy abundant blessings.
Thou nurtured me more and more each year
until, when my nature was perfected
and my strength balanced,
Thou madest Thy argument encumbent upon me by inspiring me with knowledge of Thee,
awing me with the marvels of Thy wisdom,
awakening me to the wonders of Thy creation which Thou hadst multiplied in Thy Heaven and Thy earth,[10]
and instructing me in Thy thanks and remembrance.
Thou madest encumbent upon me Thy obedience and worship,
madest me to understand what Thy messengers had brought
and madest easy for me the acceptance of Thy good pleasure.
Thou wast gracious to me in all of this, through Thy succour and kindness.
Then, since Thou created me from the best soil,[11]
Thou wert not satisfied, my God, that I should have one blessing without another.
Thou provided me with varieties of sustenance
and kinds of garments
and Thy tremendous — most tremendous — graciousness to me
and Thy eternal goodness toward me.
And finally, when Thou hadst completed for me every

and turned away from me all misfortunes,
Thou wert not prevented by my ignorance and audacity
from guiding me toward that which would bring me nigh
to Thee
or from giving me success in that which would bring me
close to Thee.
For if I prayed to Thee Thou answered,
if I asked of Thee Thou gavest,
if I obeyed Thee Thou showed Thy gratitude,
and if I thanked Thee Thou gavest me more.[12]
All of that was to perfect Thy blessings upon me and
Thy goodness toward me.
So glory be to Thee; Glory be to Thee,
who are Producer and Reproducer,[13] Laudable,
Glorious.
Holy are Thy Names and tremendous Thy bounties.
So which of Thy blessings, my God, can I enumerate by counting
and mentioning?

For which of Thy gifts am I able to give thanks?
Since they, O Lord, are more than reckoners can count[14]
or those who entrust to memory can attain by knowledge.
But the affliction and hardship, O God, that Thou turned
and averted from me
is more than the health and happiness that came to me.
And I witness, my God, by the truth of my faith,
the knotted resolutions of my certainty,
my pure and unadulterated profession of Unity,
the hidden inwardness of my consciousness,
the places to which the streams of light of my eyes
are attached,
the lines on my forehead's surface,
the openings for my breath's channels,
the parts of my nose's soft point,
the paths of my ears' canals,

what my lips close upon and compress,
the movements of my tongue in speaking,
the joint at the back of my mouth and jaw,
the sockets of my molar teeth,
the place where I swallow my food and drink,
that which bears my brain,
the hollow passages of my neck's fibers,
that which is contained in my breast's cavity,
the carriers of my aorta,
the places where my heart's curtain[15] is attached,
the small pieces of flesh around my liver,
that which the ribs of my sides encompass,
the sockets of my joints,
the contraction of my members,
the tips of my fingers,
my flesh,
my blood,
my hair,
my skin,
my nerves,
my windpipe,[16]
my bones,
my brain,
my veins,
and all of my members,
what was knitted upon them in the days when I was
a suckling baby,
what the earth has taken away from me,
my sleep,
my waking,
my being still,
and the movements of my bowing and prostrating,
that had I taken pains and had I striven
for the duration of the epochs and ages

— were my life to be extended through them —
to deliver thanks for one of Thy blessings,
I would not have been able to do so,
except by Thy grace, which alone makes encumbent
upon me never-ending and ever renewed
gratitude to Thee,
and fresh and ever present praise.
Indeed, and were I and the reckoners among Thy
creatures ever so eager
to calculate the extent of Thy bestowal of blessings,
whether past
or approaching,
we would fail to encompass it through numbers
or to calculate its boundaries.
Never! How could it ever be done!
For Thou announcest in Thy eloquent Book
and truthful Tiding,
"And if you count God's blessing, you will never
number it" (14:34) .
Thy Book, O God, Thy Message, has spoken the
truth!
And Thy prophets and messengers delivered Thy
revelation that Thou hadst sent down upon
them
and the religion that Thou hadst promulgated for them
and through them.
And I witness, my God, by my effort,
my diligence,
and the extent of my obedience and my capacity,
and I say as a believer possessing certainty,

"Praise belongs to God,
who has not taken to Him a son"
that He might have an heir,
"and who has not any associate in His dominion"

who might oppose Him in what He creates,
"nor any protector out of humbleness" (17:111)
who would aid Him in what He fashions.
So glory be to Him,
glory be to Him!
"Why, were there gods in earth and heaven other than God,
they would surely go to ruin" (21:22) and be rent.[17]
Glory be to God, the Unique, the One,
"the Everlasting Refuge" who "has not begotten, nor has He been begotten,
and equal to Him there is none" (112:2-4) .
Praise belongs to God,
praise equal to the praise of the angels stationed near to Him
and the prophets sent by Him.
And God bless His elect, Muhammad,
the Seal of the Prophets,
and his virtuous, pure and sincere household, and give them peace.

Then he began to supplicate. He occupied himself with prayer as tears ran from his blessed eyes. Then he said:

O God, cause me to fear Thee as if I were seeing Thee,[18]
give me felicity through piety toward Thee,
make me not wretched by disobedience toward Thee,
choose the best for me by Thy decree (*qaḍā'*)
and bless me by Thy determination (*qadar*),
that I may love not the hastening of what Thou hast delayed,
nor the delaying of what Thou hast hastened.
O God, appoint for me sufficiency in my soul,
certainty in my heart,

sincerity in my action,
light in my eyes,

and insight in my religion.
Give me enjoyment of my bodily members,
make my hearing and my seeing my two inheritors,
help me against him who wrongs me,
show me in him my revenge and my desires,
and console thereby my eyes.
O God, remove my affliction,
veil my defects,
forgive my offence,
drive away my Satan,[19]
dissolve my debt,
and give me, my God, the highest degree
in the world to come and in this world.
O God, to Thee belongs the praise,
just as Thou created me and made me to hear and to see;
and to Thee belongs the praise,
just as Thou created me and made me a creature unimpaired
as a mercy to me,
while Thou hadst no need of my creation.

My Lord, since Thou created me
and then made straight my nature;
my Lord, since Thou caused me to grow
and made good my shape;[20]
my Lord, since Thou didst good to me
and gavest me well-being in my soul;
my Lord, since Thou preserved me
and gavest me success;
my Lord, since Thou blessed me
and then guided me;

my Lord, since Thou chosest me
and gavest me of every good;
my Lord, since Thou gavest me to eat
and drink;[21]
my Lord, since Thou enriched me
and contented me;[22]
my Lord, since Thou aided me
and exalted me;
my Lord, since Thou clothed me with Thy pure covering
and smoothed the way for me by Thy sufficient
fashioning:
Bless Muhammad and the household of Muhammad,
aid me against the misfortunes of time and the
calamities of nights and days,
deliver me from the terrors of this world and the
torments of the world to come
and spare me from the evil of that which the evildoers
do in the earth.

O God, as for what I fear, spare me from it,
and as for what I seek to avoid, guard me against it.
In my soul and my religion watch over me,
in my travelling protect me,
in my family and my property appoint for me a
successor,
in what Thou hast provided for me bless me,
in my soul humble me,
in the eyes of men magnify me,
from the evil of jinn and men preserve me,
for my sins disgrace me not,
for my inward secrets shame me not,
for my action try me not,
of Thy blessings deprive me not
and to other than Thee entrust me not.

My God, to whom wouldst Thou entrust me?
To a relative? He would cut me off.
Or to a stranger? He would look at me with displeasure.
Or to those who act toward me with arrogance?
But Thou art my Lord and the sovereign over my affair.
I would complain to Thee of my exile and the remoteness of my abode,
and that he whom Thou hast made sovereign over me despises me.
My God, so cause not Thy wrath to alight upon me.
If Thou becomest not wrathful with me
I will have no care[23] — glory be to Thee!
But Thy protection is more embracing.
So I ask Thee, O Lord, by the Light of Thy Face by which the earth and the heavens are illuminated,
shadows are removed,
and the affairs of the ancients and the later folk are set aright,
not to cause me to die when Thy wrath is upon me,[24]
nor to send down upon me Thy anger.
The pleasure is Thine!
The pleasure is Thine,
to be satisfied with me before that.

There is no god but Thou, Lord of the Holy Land,[25]
the Sacred Monument,[26]
and the Ancient House,[27]
upon which Thou caused blessing to descend
and which Thou madest a sanctuary for mankind.[28]

O He who pardons the greatest sins by His clemency!
O He who lavishes blessings by His bounty!
O He who gives abundance by His generosity!
O Sustenance to me in my adversity!

O Companion to me in my solitude!
O Aid to me in my affliction!
O Benefactor to me in my blessing!
O my God
and God of my fathers,
Abraham, Ishmael, Isaac and Jacob![29]
Lord of Gabriel, Michael and Israfil![30]
Lord of Muhammad, the Seal of the Prophets,
and his household, the chosen ones!
Revealer of the Torah, the Gospel, the Psalms and
the Criterion,[31]
and Sender down of *Kāf Hā' Yā' ʿAyn Ṣād, Ṭā' Hā', Yā' Sīn*, and the Wise Quran![32]
Thou art my cave (of refuge) when the roads for all their
amplitude constrict me
and the land for all its breadth is strait for me.
If not for Thy mercy, I would have been among the
perishing,
and Thou annullest my slip.
If not for Thy covering me,[33] I would have been
among the disgraced,
and Thou confirmest me with help against my enemies.[34]
And if not for Thy helping me, I would have been
among those overcome.[35]

O He who appropriated loftiness and exaltation to Himself,
so His friends (*awliyā'*) are mighty through His might!
O He before whom kings place the yoke of abasement
around their necks,
for they fear His overwhelming power!
"He knows the treachery of the eyes and what the
breasts conceal" (40:19)
and the unseen brought by time and fate.
O He about whom none knows how He is but He!

O He about whom none knows what He is but He!
O He whom none knows but He!
O He who squeezed the earth onto the water and held
back the air with the sky!
O He to whom belong the noblest Names![36]
O He who possesses kindness which will never be cut off!
O He who assigned the cavalcade to Joseph in the barren
land,
brought him out of the well
and made him a king after slavery!
O He who returned him to Jacob after "his eyes were
whitened with sorrow that he was
suppressing" (12:84)![37]
O He who removed affliction and tribulation from Job[38]
and restrained Abraham's hands from the sacrifice of
his son after he had reached old age and
his life had passed by![39]
O He who answered the prayer of Zachariah
and bestowed upon him John,
not leaving him childless and alone![40]
O He who brought Jonah out from the stomach of the
fish![41]
O He who parted the sea for the Children of Israel,
then saved them
and drowned Pharoah and his hosts![42]
O He who sends winds heralding His mercy![43]

O He who does not hurry (to act) against those of His
creatures who disobey Him![44]
O He who rescued the sorcerers after (their) long denial!
They had early benefitted from His blessing,
eating His provision
and worshipping other than Him;
they had opposed, denied and cried lies to His
messengers.[45]

O God!
O God!
O Beginner, O Creator with no compeer!
O Everlasting who has no end!
O Living when nothing was alive!
O Quickener of the dead![46]
O "He Who is aware of the deserts of every soul"
(13:33)!
O He toward whom my gratitude was little,
yet He deprived me not!
My transgression was great,
yet He disgraced me not!
He saw me committing acts of disobedience,
yet he made me not notorious!
O He who watched over me in childhood!
O He who provided for me in my adulthood!
O He whose favors toward me cannot be reckoned and
whose blessings cannot be repaid!
O He who has confronted me with the good and the fair,
and I have confronted Him with evil and disobedience
in return!
O He who led me to faith before I had come to know
gratitude for His gracious bestowal!
O He upon whom I called when I was sick
and He healed me,
when naked
and He clothed me,
when hungry
and He satisfied me,
when thirsty
and He gave me to drink,
when abased

and He exalted me,[47]
when ignorant

and He gave me knowledge,
when alone
and He increased my number,
when away
and He returned me,
when empty-handed
and He enriched me,
when in need of help
and He helped me,
and when rich
and He took not from me.
I refrained from (calling upon Thee in) all of that
and Thou caused me to begin (to call).
Thine are the praise and the gratitude!
O He who overlooked my slip,
relieved my distress,
heard my prayer,
covered my defects,
forgave my sins,
caused me to reach my desire,
and helped me against my enemy!
If I were to count Thy blessings, favors and generous acts of kindness
I would not be able to reckon them.[48]

O my Protector!
Thou art He who was gracious,
Thou art He who blessed,
Thou art He who worked good,
Thou art He who was kind,
Thou art He who was bounteous,
Thou art He who perfected,
Thou art He who provided,
Thou art He who gave success,

Thou art He who bestowed,
Thou art He who enriched,
Thou art He who contented,[49]
Thou art He who sheltered,[50]
Thou art He who sufficed,
Thou art He who guided,
Thou art He who preserved (from sin),
Thou art He who covered (my sins),
Thou art He who forgave,
Thou art He who overlooked,
Thou art He who established (in the earth),[51]
Thou art He who exalted,
Thou art He who aided,
Thou art He who supported,
Thou art He who confirmed,
Thou art He who helped,
Thou art He who healed,
Thou art He who gave well-being,
Thou art He who honored
— blessed art Thou
and high exalted!
So Thine is the praise everlastingly,
and Thine is gratitude enduringly and forever!

Then I, my God, confess my sins,
so forgive me for them.
I am he who did evil,
I am he who made mistakes,
I am he who purposed (to sin),
I am he who was ignorant,
I am he who was heedless,
I am he who was negligent,
I am he who relied (upon other than Thee),
I am he who premeditated,
I am he who promised,

I am he who went back on his word,
I am he who confessed (my sins)
and I am he who acknowledged Thy blessings upon me
and with me and then returned to my sins.
So forgive me for them,
O He who is not harmed by the sins of His servants
nor needs He their obedience.
He gives success through His aid and His mercy to
whomsoever of them works righteousness.
So praise belongs to Thee, My God and My Lord!
My God, Thou commanded me and I disobeyed
and Thou forbade me and I committed what Thou hadst
forbidden.
I became such that I neither possessed any mark of
guiltlessness
that I might ask forgiveness
nor any power
that I might be helped.
Then by what means shall I turn toward Thee, O my
Protector!?
What, by my ears?
Or my eyes?
Or my tongue?
Or my hand?
Or my leg?
Are not all of them Thy blessings given to me?
And with all of them I disobey Thee, O my Protector!
Thine is the argument and the means against me.[52]

O He who veiled me (my sins) from fathers and mothers lest
they drive me away,
from relatives and brothers lest they rebuke me,
and from kings lest they punish me!
If they had seen, O my Protector, what Thou hast seen
from me,

they would not have given me respite,
they would have abandoned me
and cut me off.

So here I am, O my God,
before Thee O Lord,
humbled, abased, constrained, despised,
neither possessing guiltlessness that I might ask forgiveness
nor possessing power that I might be helped.
There is no argument with which I might argue,
nor can I say I committed not (sins) and worked not evil.
And denial, were I to deny — my Protector! — could hardly profit me.
How could it ever do that?
For all of my members are witness against me for what I have done.[53]
And I acted with certainty and without any doubt that Thou wilt ask me about great affairs,
and that Thou art the equitable Judge who does no wrong.
Thy justice is deadly for me and I flee from Thy every just act.
If thou chastisest me, O my God, it is for my sins after Thy argument against me;
and if Thou pardonest me, it is by Thy clemency, generosity and kindness.

"There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of the wrong-doers" (21:87)
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of those who pray forgiveness.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of those who profess Thy Unity.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of the fearful.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!

Truly I am one of those who are afraid.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of the hopeful.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of those who yearn.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of those who say "There is no god but Thou".
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of the petitioners.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of the glorifiers.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee!
Truly I am one of those who magnify.
There is no god but Thou, glory be to Thee, my Lord, and the Lord of my fathers, the ancients!

My God, this is my praise of Thee exalting Thy majesty,
my sincerity in remembering Thee by professing Thy Unity,
and my acknowledgment of Thy bounties by enumeration,
even though I acknowledge
that I cannot reckon them for their multitude,
their abundance,
their manifestness
and their existence from ancient times
until a present in which Thou hast never ceased to care for me through them
from when Thou created me and brought me into existence in the beginning of (my) life,
by enriching from poverty,
relieving affliction,
bringing ease,
removing hardship,
dispelling distress,

and (giving me) well-being in body
and soundness in religion.
Were all the world's inhabitants, both the ancients and the later folk, to assist me in attempting to mention Thy blessing,
I would not be able, nor would they, to do so.
Holy art Thou and high exalted,
a generous,
mighty,
merciful
Lord.
Thy bounties cannot be reckoned,
nor Thy praise accomplished,
nor Thy blessings repaid.
Bless Muhammad and the household of Muhammad,
complete Thy blessings upon us
and aid us in Thy obedience.
Glory be to Thee! There is no god but Thou.

O God, truly Thou hearest the destitute,
removest the evil,[54]
succourest the afflicted,
healest the sick,
enrichest the poor,
mendest the broken,
hast mercy upon the young
and helpest the old.
There is no Support other than Thee
and none powerful over Thee.
And Thou art the Sublime, the Great.
O Freer of the prisoner in irons!
O Provider of the infant child!
O Protection of the frightened refugee!
O He who has no associate and no assistant!

Bless Muhammad and the household of Muhammad,
and give me this evening the best of what Thou hast given
to and bestowed upon any of Thy servants,
whether a blessing Thou assignest,
a bounty Thou renewest,
a trial Thou avertest,
an affliction Thou removest,
a prayer Thou hearest,
a good deed Thou acceptest
or an evil deed Thou overlookest.
Truly Thou art gracious,
Aware of what Thou wilt,
and Powerful over all things!

O God, truly Thou art the nearest of those who are called,
the swiftest of those who answer,
the most generous of those who pardon,
the most openhanded of those who give
and the most hearing of those who are asked of.
O Merciful and Compassionate in this world and the next!
Like Thee none is asked of;
and other than Thee none is hoped for.
I prayed to Thee and Thou answered me,
I asked of Thee and Thou gavest to me,
I set Thee as my quest and Thou hadst mercy upon me,
I depended upon Thee and Thou delivered me,
I took refuge with Thee and Thou sufficed me,
O God, so bless Muhammad, Thy servant, messenger and
prophet,
and his good and pure household, all of them.
And complete Thy blessings upon us,
gladden us with Thy gift

and inscribe us as those who thank Thee and remember
Thy bounties.

Amen, amen, O Lord of all beings!
O God, O He who owned and then was all-powerful,
was all-powerful and then subjected,
was disobeyed and then veiled (the sin of disobedience),
and was prayed forgiveness and then forgave.
O Goal of yearning seekers
and utmost Wish of the hopeful!
O He who "encompasses everything in knowledge" (65:12)
and embraces those who seek pardon in tenderness,
mercy and clemency!
O God, truly we turn towards Thee this evening,
which Thou honored and glorified through Muhammad,
Thy prophet and messenger,
the elect of Thy creation,
the faithful guardian of Thy revelation which bears good tidings and warning and which is the light-giving lamp[55]
which Thou gavest to those who surrender (*al-muslimīn*)
and appointed as a mercy to the world's inhabitants.[56]
O God, so bless Muhammad and the household of Muhammad,
just as Muhammad is worthy of that from Thee,
O Sublime!
So bless him and his elect, good and pure household, all of them,
and encompass us in Thy pardon,
for to Thee cry voices
in diverse languages.

So appoint for us a share this evening, O God,
of every good which Thou dividest among Thy servants,
every light by which Thou guidest,[57]
every mercy which Thou spreadest,[58]
every blessing which Thou sendest down,
every well-being with which Thou clothest
and every provision which Thou outspreadest.[59]

O Most merciful of the merciful!
O God, transform us now into men successful,
triumphant,
pious,
and prosperous.
Set us not among those who despair,
empty us not of Thy mercy,
deprive us not of that bounty of Thine for which we hope,
and set us not among those deprived of Thy mercy,
nor those who despair of the bounty of Thy gift for which we hope.
Reject us not with the disappointed,
nor those driven from Thy door.

O Most Magnanimous of the most magnanimous!
O Most Generous of the most generous!
Toward Thee we have turned having sure faith,
repairing to and bound for Thy Sacred House.[60]
So help is with our holy rites,
perfect for us our pilgrimage,
pardon us,
and give us well-being,
for we have extended toward Thee our hands
and they are branded with the abasement of confession.
O God, so give us this evening what we have asked of Thee
and suffice us in that in which we have prayed Thee to suffice us,
for there is none to suffice us apart from Thee
and we have no lord other than Thee.
Put into effect concerning us is Thy decision,
encompassing us is Thy knowledge[61]
and just for us is Thy decree.
Decree for us the good
and place us among the people of the good!

O God make encumbent upon us through Thy magnanimity
the mightiest wage,
the most generous treasure
and the lastingness of ease.
Forgive us our sins, all of them,
destroy us not with those who perish,[62]
and turn not Thy tenderness and mercy away from us,
O Most Merciful of the merciful!

O God, place us in this hour among those
who ask of Thee and to whom Thou givest,
who thank Thee and whom Thou increasest,[63]
who turn to Thee in repentance and whom Thou acceptest[64]
and who renounce all of their sins before Thee and whom Thou forgivest,
O Lord of majesty and splendor!
O God, purify us,
show us the right way
and accept our entreaty.
O Best of those from whom is asked!
And O Most Merciful of those whose mercy is sought!

O He from whom is not hidden the eyelids' winking,
the eyes' glancing,
that which rests in the concealed,
and that which is enfolded in hearts' hidden secrets!
What, has not all of that been reckoned in Thy knowledge
and embraced by Thy clemency?
Glory be to Thee and high indeed art Thou exalted above what the evil-doers say!
The seven heavens and the earths and all that is therein praise Thee,
and there is not a thing but hymns Thy praise.[65]
So Thine is the praise, the glory and the exaltation of

majesty,
O Lord of majesty and splendor,
of bounty and blessing
and of great favor!
And Thou art the Magnanimous, the Generous,
the Tender, the Compassionate.
O God, give me amply of Thy lawful provision,
bestow upon me well-being in my body and my religion,
make me safe from fear[66]
and deliver me from the Fire.
O God, devise not against me,[67]
lead me not on step by step,[68]
trick me not[69]
and avert from me the evil of the ungodly among jinn and men.

Then he lifted his head and eyes toward Heaven. Tears were flowing from his blessed eyes as if they were two waterskins, and he said in a loud voice:

O Most Hearing of those who hear!
O Most Seeing of those who behold!
O Swiftest of reckoners![70]
O Most Merciful of the merciful!
Bless Muhammad and the household of Muhammad,
the chiefs, the fortunate.
And, I ask of Thee, O God, my need.
If Thou grantest it to me,
what Thou holdest back from me will cause me no harm;
and if Thou holdest it back from me,
what Thou grantest me will not profit me.
I ask Thee to deliver me from the Fire.
There is no god but Thou alone,
Thou hast no associate.
Thine is the dominion,

and Thine is the praise,
and Thou art powerful over everything.
O my Lord!
O my Lord!

Then he said "O my Lord" over and over. Those who had been gathered around him, who had listened to all of his prayer and who had limited themselves to saying "amen" raised their voices in weeping. They stayed in his company until the sun went down, and then all of them loaded their mounts and set out in the direction of the Sacred Monument.[71]

NOTES

1.This translation is that of William C. Chittick in *A Shi'ite Anthology*, Muhammadi Trust.

2.This prayer has been recited by Muslims for almost 14 centuries.

3.See 73:20: *"And lend to God a good loan. Whatever good you shall forward to your soul's account , you shall find it with God as better and mightier a wage."*

4. See 40:43. In another place, using a different root form for the verb 'return', the Quran says in one of the verses most often heard in the Islamic world,*"Surely we belong to God and to Him we return."* (2:156)

5. See 76:1: *"Has there come on man a while of time when he was a thing unremembered?"*

6. The sin of breaking God's covenant is often described in the Quran. For example,

was a thing unremembered?"

6. The sin of breaking God's covenant is often described in the Quran. For example, *"Such as break the covenant of God after its solemn binding...they shall be the losers."* (2:27). And *"Crying lies to the Messengers"* is often mentioned as a major sin of past nations, i.e., *"And the people of Noah, when they cried lies to the Messengers..."* (25:37).

7. See 75:36-37: *"What, does man reckon he shall be left to roam at will? Was he not a sperm-drop spilled?..."*

8. Reference to 39:6: *"He created you in the wombs of your mothers, creation after creation, in a threefold darkness."*

9. See 18:52: *'I made them not to witness the creation of the heavens and the earth, nor their own creation..."*

10. See 16:13: *"And that which He has multiplied for you in the earth of diverse hues. Surely in that is a sign for a people who remember."*

11. Reference to the Imam's descent from the Prophet.

12. See 14:7: *"And when your Lord proclaimed: If you give thanks, I will give you more..."*

13. See 30:11: *"God produces creation, then He reproduces it, then unto Him you will be returned."* Also 29:19; 30:27.

14. See 14:34 and 16:18: *"And if you count God's blessing, you will never number it."*

15. The 'curtain of the heart' (*hijab al-qalb*) is the pericardium.

16. The windpipe is not mentioned in some editions of *Mafatih al-jinan*.

17. See 19:88-91: *"And they say, 'The All-merciful has taken unto Himself a son.' You have indeed advanced something hideous! The heavens are wellnigh rent of it and the earth split asunder, and the mountains wellnigh fall down crashing for that they have attributed to the All-merciful a son..."*

18. In the famous hadith concerning *ihsan* or 'spiritual virtue', it is said that "Spiritual virtue is that you should worship God as if you were seeing Him and if you see Him not, He nonetheless sees thee."

19. 43:36: *"Whoso blinds himself to the Remembrance of the All-merciful, to him We assign a Satan for comrade."*

20. 64:3: *"He shaped you and made good your shapes."* See also 40:64.

21. See 26:79: *"...who created me and Himself guides me and Himself gives me to eat and drink...."*

22. See 53:48: *"And that He it is Who enriches and contents."*

23. Some editions add here the phrase 'other than Thee'.

24. See 9:55: *"So let not their possessions or their children please thee; God only desires thereby to chastise them in this present life and that their souls should depart while they are unbelievers."*

25. I.e. Makkah and the land surrounding it.

26. The 'Sacred Waymark' , known as Muzdalifah, is the place where the pilgrims spend the night after the day at Arafat. See 2:198; *"When you press on from Arafat, remember God by the Sacred Waymark."*

27. I.e., the Ka'bah, called the 'Ancient House' in reference to the Tradition that it was constructed by Abraham. See 22:29 and 22:33; also 14:35-7.

28. See 2:125: *"And when We made the House a resort for mankind and a sanctuary..."*

29. A further reference to the Prophet's blood descent from the Abrahamic line of Prophets.

30. Israfil is the angel who according to Islamic Tradition blows the trumpet at the time of the Resurrection.

31. The Criterion (*al-furqan*) is one of the names of the Quran mentioned several times in its text such as 3:4 and 25:1.

32. *Kaf Ha' Ya' Ayn Sad* are Arabic letters which appear at the beginning of the chapter of Maryam, 19. *Ta' Ha'* and *Ya' Sin* are also letters appearing at the beginning of Quranic chapters 20 and 36 respectively, from which the chapters take their names. "The Wise Quran" is a title which appears in 36:2.

33. *Al-Sattar,* "He who covers (faults and sins)" is one of the names of God.

34. See 3:13: *"God confirms with His help whom He will.."*

35. See 3:160: *"If God helps you, none can overcome you."*

36. *Akram al-asma'.* God's fairest names' (*al-asma' al-husna*) are referred to several times in the Quran such as 7:180 and 20:8.

37. For the story of Joseph in the Quran see Surah 12.

38. See 21:83-84 and 38:42-45.

39. See 37:102-105 and 14:39.

40. See 21: 89-90.

41. The story of Jonah and the 'fish' is referred to in 68:48-50.

42. See 26:63-66 etc.

43. See 25:48: *"And He it is Who sends the winds, glad tidings*

heralding His Mercy, and We send down purifying water from the sky." See also 7:57 and 30:46.

44. See 18:59: *"Thy Lord is the Forgiver, Full of Mercy. If He took them to task (now) for what they earn, He would hasten on the doom for them; but theirs is an appointed term from which they will find no escape."*

45. Reference to the story of Moses and the sorcerers, related several times in the Quran, especially 7:111-126; 20:62-73 and 26:36-51.

46. A Divine Name used in the Quran in 30:50 and 41:39.

47. See 3:26: *"Thou exaltest whom Thou wilt, and Thou abasest whom Thou wilt."*

48. Again reference to 14:34 and 16:18.

49. See 53:48: *"He it is who enriches and contents."*

50. See 93:6: *"Did He not find thee an orphan and shelter Thee?"*

51. See 7:10: *"We have established you in the earth..."*

52. See 6:150: *"To God belongs the argument conclusive."*

53. See 41:19-20: *"Upon the day when God's enemies are mustered to the Fire duly disposed, till when they are come to it, their hearing, their eyes and their skins bear witness against them concerning what they have been doing."*

54. 27:62: *"He who answers the constrained, when he calls unto Him and removes the evil and appoints you to be successors in the earth."*

55. See 41:4 and 33:46.

56. See 21:107.

57. The symbolism of light and darkness is employed often in the Quran, not to mention its usage in Sufism and philosophy, such as the School of Illumination(*ishraq*) of Suhrawardi. A good example of Quranic usage is the following: *"God is the Protector of the believers; He brings them forth from the shadows into the light."* 2:257. There is also the famous 'Light Verse' (24:35), which contains the sentence *"God guides to His Light whom He will."*

58. See 42:28.

59. See 17:30.

60. Again a reference to the rites performed on the Day of Arafat. The ‘Sacred House, is, of course , the Ka‘bah.

61. See 65:12.

62. The word ‘destroy’ (*ahlak* from whose root is derived the word ‘those who perish’, *halikun*) is used repeatedly in the Quran in reference to God’s punishment of the evildoers, especially those of generations and ages past, as a sign and a warning for those present. For example, *"Have they not regarded how We destroyed before them many a generation..."* (6:6). See also 10:14; 19:98; 21:9; etc.

63. See 2:58: *"We will forgive you your sins and will increase (reward) for the right-doers."*

64. See 9:104: *"God is He who accepts repentance from His servants."*

65. This sentence is almost a word for word quotation of 17:44.

66. See 106:4: *"God is He Who accepts repentance from His servants."*

67. See 3:54: *"And they devised and God devised and God is the best of devisers."* See 13:42; 27:50, etc.

68. See 7:182-3: *"And those who cry lies to Our signs – step by step We lead them on from whence they know not."* See also 68:44.

69. See 4:142: *"The hypocrites seek to trick God but God is tricking them."*

70. A Divine Name appearing in 6:62.

71. At this point, the compiler remarks that some sources add another section to Imam Husayn’s prayer, a section which he then relates himself. Other authorities, such as Majlisi, express their doubts as to the authenticity of this last section. In fact it is almost certainly by Ibn ‘Ata’allah al-Iskandari, and therefore it has not been translated here.

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Appendix Four: Muhammad Iqbal on the Bayt al-Haram

XX

On the idea that the 'Collective Life' of a nation requires a tangible center and the center of the Muslim Nation is the Bayt al-Haram.

I untie the knot of the affairs of life
And make you conscious of the mysteries of life
As a thought shys away from self in practice
It is its habit to avoid direction.
How is it that it comes sooner or later into this world?
How is it that its time gives birth to tomorrow and yesterday?
If you consider things, take a look at 'self'
O unaware! You are nothing but 'perpetually escaping'.
In order to exhibit its invisible light
The flame (of life) hides itself behind its own smoke.
So that we see its course as being stationary,
The wave of its stream dissolves in the pearl.
Its fire takes its breath inward,
Becomes a wild tulip and breathes out from a branch.
Your unrefined thought is slow and lame.
You accuse the flower of being attached to the flight of its color!
Life is not a nesting bird.
It is a bird of color which is nothing other than flight.
It is in a cage and free, as well.
With its sounds, it laments, too.

Moment after moment it deprives its wings of flight.
Moment after moment it seeks remedy for its past faults.
It ties knots in its own work itself.
Then again simplifies its difficulties.
Sometimes the swift life fixes itself in a spot
That its desire to strut may be redoubled in force.
So many rhythms are asleep in its anguish.
Yesterday and tomorrow are born of its today.
Moment after moment it causes difficulties for itself and
simplifies them.
Moment after moment it creates fresh things anew.
Although like fragrance it is total flight
When it inhabits a breast, it becomes a breath.
It weaves its thread upon itself
Then ties itself into a knot.
Within its knot, like a seed, it contains leaf and fruit.
When it opens its eyes to 'self' it becomes a tree.
It finds a robe from water and clay,
Finds hand, foot, eye and heart.
Within the khalwat of this living body,
It creates societies of life.
Like the laws of the birth of an ummah,
Life joins together at a center.
The center of a circle is like the spirit in the body.
Its line is hidden in its point.
A nation's relation and system is from a center.
Its existence continues from its center.
Our confidant and secret is the Bayt al-Haram.
Our anguish and our rhythms are the Bayt al-Haram.
We nurture it like our breath within our breast.
It is a sweet spirit and we its form.
Our garden is renewed from its dew.

Our pastures are watered from its Zamzam.
The sun borrows its light from its atoms.
It dives again and again into its space.
We are the reason for its claims.
We are from Abraham, the Friend of God.
It has brought us honor in the world
And has blended eternity with our mortal existence.
The Muslim nation is united in circumambulating it.
Like the morning of the sun within the Divine Law.
According to its reckoning, one is many
And you become mature by preserving this one.
You are alive because of your union with that sanctuary.
You are eternal as long as you circumambulate it.
In the world, the ummah's spirit is in the congregation.
Look well! The secret of the haram is the congregation.
Learn a lesson, O clear-minded Muslim.
Learn from the consequences of Moses' ummah.
When that nation lost its center
The thread of the congregation of the nation broke.
That which grew in the bosom of the Messenger
Each knew the secrets of the whole.
Time struck such a blow to its ear
That life became blood which then trickled from its eyes.
Moisture left the roots of its vine
So that its earth could not even support a willow.
It has lost its tongue through alienation.
It has lost both its voice and its nest.
The candle died and its moths now mourn it.
This handful of earth trembles at its tale.
O you whose body has been wounded by the blade of tyranny.
O captive of doubts and superstitions,

Make your clothes into the garments of ihram.
Find a new dawn from the dust of dusk.
Drown in your prostration like a slave.
Become so lost that you become total prostration.
The past Muslim found in 'self' a need.
Through which he united with his Creator.
He bore all difficulties upon the Way of God
Whereby his whole being blossomed into a garden.

Index of the Quranic Verses

page	surah,verse	
166	9:31	اتخذوا احبارهم ورهبانهم ...
238	12:108	ادعوا الى الله على بصيرة ...
118	48:29	اشداء على الكفار رحماء بينهم
237	88:17	افلا ينظرون الى الابل ...
25	42:53	الا الى الله تصير الامور
165	8:39	الدين كله لله
235	67:2	الذي خلق الموت والحياة ...
166	114:4-5	الذي يوسوس في صدور الناس ...
209	4:76	الذين آمنوا يقاتلون في سبيل الله
209	4:77	الم تر الى الذين ...ولاتظلمون فتيلا
208,235	57:25	انا ارسلنا رسلنا بالبينات .. ليقوم الناس بالقسط
235	18:7	انا جعلنا ما على الارض زينة لها ...
25,89,90	2:156	انا لله وانا اليه راجعون
31	16:120	ان ابراهيم كان امة ...
124	21:105	ان الارض يرثها عبادى الصالحون
165	6:57	ان الحكم الا لله
24	17:36	ان السمع والبصر والفؤاد ...
47	17:36	ان اول بيت وضع للناس ...
144,145,153	8:28	انما اموالكم واولادكم فتنة
49	2:115	اينما تولوا فثم وجه الله
239	29:42	تلك الامثال نضربها
102	2:199	ثم افيضوا من حيث افاض الناس
63	15:27	حماء مسنون
149,150	4:28	خلق الانسان ضعيفا

سال القرية	12:82	142
صلصال كالفخار	55:14	63
... غاسق اذا وقب	113:1-5	113,192,193
فاذا افضتم ... ثم افيضوا ...	2:199	98,129
فالهمها فجورها وتقويها	91:8	148
فبعث الله النبيين ...	2:213	167,208
فقاتلوا اولياء الشيطان ...	4:76	209
فكلوا منها واطعموا البائس ...	22:28	226
فكلوا منها واطعموا القانع ...		
فليعلمن الله الذين صدقوا ...	29:3	235
فمثله كمثل الكلب ...	7:176	166
في مقعد صدق عند مليك المقتدر	54:55	25,236
قد افلح من زكيها	91:10	63,236
قل اعوذ برب الناس ...	114:1-3	196
كان الناس امة واحدة ...	2:213	168
كل شئ هالك الا وجهه	28:88	89
كل يوم هو في شأن	55:29	30
... كمثل الحمار يحمل اسفارا ...	62:5	166
الا له الخلق والامر	7:54	125
من قتل نفسا ...	5:32	18
واذن في الناس بالحج ...	22:27	23,179,235
والى الله المصير	35:18	236
والذين كفروا يقاتلون في سبيل الطاغوت	4:76	209
وتدلوا بها الى الحكام	2:188	144
ولاتحسبن الذين قتلوا في سبيل الله امواتا ...	3:169	56
ولن تجد لسنة الله تبديلا	33:62	125
ولن تجد لسنة الله تحويلا	35:43	127
وليعلم الله من ينصره ...	57:25	201

124	28:5	ونريد ان نمن على الذين استضعفوا في الارض ...
58	48:10	يدالله فوق ايديهم
103	80:35	يوم يفرالمرء من اخيه ...

General Index

A

Abel, 125, 163, 200ff
  -ian ethics 198
Abraham
  -absolute freedom of servitude to God, the 154
  -affection for his son brought him to the edge of Iblis' cliff, 150
  -after a lifetime of migrations, battles, 135
  -after a lifetime of the oppression of Nimrod 135
  -after a lifetime of the prejudices of idolatrous custodians 135
  -after a century of struggle and mobility 135
  -after a lifetime of the superstitions of star worshippers 135
  -anguish in his soul 65,227
  -anguish of losing Isma'il has filled the place of the pleasure in keeping him, the, 153
  -appointed to build the House 67,229
  -appointed to install the Black Stone 67, 229
  -architect of the House of Freedom 67, 229
  -at the highest peak of his human power 150
  at the edge of a sharp cliff of a fall 149
  -aware of what to do 151
  -axe in his hand 65, 227
  -bearer of migrations, wanderings, lonelinesses 67,229
  -bearer of torture 67, 229
  -bearing the heavy mission of monotheism 135
  -bewildered plaything of Iblis, a 150
  -carried the mission 65, 227
  -choose 137
  -combination of putrid clay and Spirit, the 148
  -command 131
  -commander of the longers for Truth, a 151
  -crusher of ignorance and tyranny 65, 227
  -deserts affection for Isma'il 153
  -desires to have a son 135
  -destroyer of idols 150
  -Divine Spirit and exalted human being, the 140
  -do not boast 139

shipping Iblis instead of God 147
  -steel-like hero of the prophetic mission melts, this 137
  -stepped in the fire of ignorance and tyranny 66, 228
  -struggler against Iblis 67, 229
  -take your beloved son 139
  -that's enough 154
  -trembles in fright 137
  -upriser in his prejudiced and idol-worshipping and perhaps even idol-making father's house, an 135
  -victor of the greatest battle of history 137
  -war rages within 147
  -was a liberated, enlightened youth 135
  -who do you choose 137
  -with your two hands, put the knife to Isma'il's throat and kill' 137
absolute
  -Absolute 24
  -beauty 24
  -eternity 24
  -good 24
  -move 25
  -movement 24
  -perfection 24
  -trust 24
  -truth 72
Abu Talib 8
'Ali
  - son of the Ka'bah 18
  -like Muslims 4
  -thunder-like cry 9
alien
  -to the people 4
Allah (*see also* God)
  -/Iblis 149
allegiance (*bayat*)
  -freed from...to others 58
  -give to God 58
  -*nakith* : those who break their 194
amr b'il ma'ruf wa nahy an al-munkar
  has become a bludgeon for excommunication 4
  -philosophy of jihad, the 4
anticipation
  -has become a philosophy justifying oppression 4
  -has become a philosophy of submission 4
  -in fruitless 5
  -justifying the arisings for justice before they occur 4
  -justifying the condemnation of any steps for reform before they occur 4
  -justifying the tyranny of corruption 4

anti-human
  - -blights 196
  - -social system 20

anti-social
  - -elements 2
  - -powers 196

anthropoligists 2

appointed time,
  - -place of (*miqat*) 25, 27, 28, 29

appointment
  - -to meet with God 23
  - -with God 24

'Arafat (knowledge)
  - -combination of all countries of the world 96
  - -complete town without a government 96
  - -community of human races 96
  - -astonishing town 95
  - -Fall, the 90
  - -whole earth upon a plain 96

armed
  - -mujahids of war 121

army
  - -invading 131
  - -takes its command from the sun 120
  - -power of monotheism 120

army of monotheism
  - -armed gnostics 106,108
  - -there is no rank 109
  - -white 118
  - -worshipping mujahids 106
  - -vengenance 120

'Ashura
  - -has become the symbol of the school of bereavement 4

'atiq, freed 47

Azar
  - -idol-carver of his tribe, 65, 229

B

Balam b. Ba'ur 165ff, 198

bayat (*see also* allegiance)
  - -become allies 57
  - -break all previous 58
  - -break alliances with coercion, wealth and 58
  - -break treaties with the lords of the earth 58
  - -conclude a treaty of friendship 57
  - -concluded by people with a leader for a goal 57
  - -extend your right hand 57
  - -form a confederation 57
  - -freed from to others 58
  - -give to God 58
  - -have renewed the covenant with your fitrat (primordial nature) 58
  - -with each new allegiance

  freed of all previous 58
bayt al-'atiq 47
'being-ness' 21
bereavement 4
black female slave
  -beside Himself 51
  -most humiliated of His creatures 51
Black Stone (*hajar al-aswad*)
  -enter the circumambulation from the corner of the 57
  -Hand of God in the House of God 67
  -here you join the system of the universe 57
  -mystery of the hand, a right hand, the Right Hand of God, a 57
  -touch the 57
black woman (*see also* female slave, Hajar, woman, skirt, mother) 51
bludgeon for excommunication
  -over the head of a friend 4
  -over the head of the enemy
Book of Supplications 5
boundaries are numerous 27
bowing (*ruku'*) 36

C

Cain
  -Adam's heir 163
  -appointing force 164
  -children ruled history 163
  -committed fratricide 163
  -from coercion (politics), wealth (economics) and asceticism (religion) became despotism, exploitation and deception 164
  -landlord, a 163
  -landowner in rebellion against God 163
  -leaned on three bases separately 164
  -ruling power 164
  -successor not worthy of Adam 163
  -usurper of rights 164
  -was a murderer 163
  -was a usurper 163
  -who is a murderer 202
  -who is a possessor 202
  -who is a ruler 202
  -who is a witch 202
  worshipper of lust 163
call to ritual prayer 114, 115
carved, that which you yourselves 26
causes
  -historic, social or cultural 3
cemetery 5, 6
characteristics
  -psychological and intellectual 2
child of Adam (*see also* human

being) 20
children of Adam 17,27
  -of Cain 27
choice
  -difficulty of, the 137
  -truth verses interest 140
Christ-like spirit 5
circumambulation
  -Absolute love 75
  -all Him 75
  -constancy, movement and harmony 53
  -Divine pre-determination 75
  -her house, her grave, her skirt are part of, 50
  -is God 75
  -is love 75
  -is the exhalted human being 75
  -is the pain of existence 75
  -is the spirit 75
  -is to seek thirst 75
  -like a butterfly 75
  -of love 50, 67, 227
city
  -cut-away from all directions , a 43
  -every one of its streets, alleys, lanes – a valley 43
  -fissure in the mountain, a 43
  -here is the sacred mosque 43
  -is near 42
  -like a large bowl 43
class behavior 2
  -unity of 16
closed circuit 20
cloth, two-piece
  -colorless 29
  -easily mistake with that of your companions, 29
  -patternless 29
  -single cloth 29
  -that you wear at the beginning of your journey towards God 29
  -unsewn 29
  -wear it now at the beginning of your journey towards the House of God 29
  -white 29
  -without any indication that you are you or that you are not another 29
clothes (*libas*)
  -are a fraud 27
  -are a kufr 27
  -color, design and quality mean me 27
  -covering over the truth 27
  -degree, A 27
  -manifestation, a 27
  -mystery, a 27
  -privilege, a 27
  -separation, a 27
  -sign, a 27
  -take off life's...of death 28
  -title, a 27

colors, wash out all 28
Command
  -of the sun 119
  -only love can accept 61
  -only love can understand 61
  -to halt the sunrise 119
commanding to good or virtue 4
Companions 8, 9
concept, permanent, distinct 13
condemned to deterioration
  -everything except what is turned towards Him 30
condemnation
  -of any steps for reform 5
congregation
  -allure of, the 58
  -beloveds of the world 58
  -cannot bear 'you' 59
  -destroys, magnetizes and digests you in its eternal,
  -living, moving body 59
  -endeavor of, the 58
  -give self to 58
  -grow distant from your still and separate self and join 58
  -he allures you to 59
  -he calls you to the 59
  -join for love 59
  -move shoulder to shoulder with 59
  -move with the 58
  -movement of the 58
  -only exists 59
  -part of the order of creation 59
  -power of the 58
  -takes you 58
congress (*see* pause after 'id)
conscious
  -humanist 215
  -intellectual 6
consciousness (*see also* sacred consciousness)
  -and love without knowledge *94*
  -creates debauchery or piety 100
  -is a phase of consciousness of self 100
  -is luminous 101
  --is singular 99
  -is subjective 99
  -is the power of understanding 100
  -makes one an executioner and another a martyr 100
  -phase after knowledge
    -power which employs science, a 99
  -sensation phase
    " 100
consumption for production 19
controversies
  -theological, historical and ethical 7

conversation
  between a father and a son 154
  -so intimate and so frightening 154
  -philosophical and subjective 4
corpse of slime 21
corpse-like living 19
corruption 18
covenant, place of (*mi'ad*) 25
covenant with God to worship Him alone 25
create the ultimate fate of your life 30
  -Creation and the Command 125
criteria
  -of friend and enemy 151
  -of Truth and falsehood 151
cube
  -contains the six directions 48
  -faces north, south, east, west, up and down 49
  -means all directions 49
cultural partnership 16
D
damned destiny 19
danger not ended 191
Dante 117
darkness 192ff
Day of Reckoning
  -in the world of action prepare yourself for the world of reckoning 24
  -when your ears, eyes and hear are put on trial 24
  -where action is no longer possible 24
  -you, a helpless victim under the merciless, increasing attack of your deeds 24
  -you, body, your body, you are responsible 24
death
  -become 29
  -choose 24
  -does not inform its victim 13
  -has no time 13
  -resolve 24
death and live
  -change 30
  -contradiction 30
  -direction 30
  -movement 30
  -perfection 30
degeneration 2,3,5
deliberations
  - in the congregation within a congregation 173
deprivation
  -great and 'roomy' word, a 202
  -includes all anti-human systems 124
  -is similar to despotism, colonialism, enslavement, ex-

ploitation, brain washing 124
- -that which metamorphosizes and effaces human beings 124
- -that which steals all human capabilities 124

deprived
- -show favor upon 124
- -upon the earth 124

descend
- -and grow closer to God 44

desert
- -this town, garden, village 21

destination
- -God is your 24

destiny
- -of Islam and Shi'ism 5

determinism
- -decreed by the multitude 128
- -foolish 19
- -of history 125

Dhihajjah
- -month of hajj, the 23
- -month of reverence, the 23

dhibh (slaughter) 141

dig the grave of your 'meness' 30

die in the place of the appointed time 30

'die before you die' 24, 28,141

dimension (s)
- -progressive 3,4
- -three-fold 5

direction (s)
- -assume 48
- -God is without 48
- -how many 48
- -negated by its opposing side 48
- -you take 48

directionless
- -Ka'bah itself is, the 48

dissolution
- -of the individual in the ummah 16

Divine Soul 21

Divine Spirit 21

drama, symbolic
- -actors, the 17
- -director is God, the 17
- -dress and ornaments, the 17
- -language of the play is movement, the 17
- -of the creation of the human being 17
- -of the maktab of Islam 17
- -principal characters are, the 17
- -scenes take place in the sacred area 17

dying in God 25

E

earth
- -place of annihilation 14
- -place of being 14

- -place of death and life 14
- earthly Adam
  - -ate the forbidden 92
  - -destroyer of barriers 92
  - -easily influenced by Eve 92
  - -exiled upon the earth 92
  - -expelled from heaven 92
  - -human being in its present concept 92
  - -prisoner of nature 92
  - -rebellious man 92
  - -weakening before Iblis 92
- economic thinker
  - -who believes the economic factor to be the determining one 165
- ego 23
- emerge from your 'me-ness' 28
- Emigrants 9
- endangered 210ff
- endless inwardness 14
- enemy, command of 4
- envious person
  - -commits evil 194
  - -dagger-thruster from behind 194
  - -fifth column of darkness 195
  - -friend in the service of an enemy 195
  - -in the guise of a friend 194
  - -kills but hands not polluted with blood 194
  - -*nakith* who breaks his allegiance, a 194
  - -no longer the dark night 194
  - -sick person, a 193
- envy
  - -complex which destroys a victorious revolution, a 194
  - -most disgraceful and untreatable disease, the 194
  - -ritually slaughters friends 194
  - -throws down the most courageous mujahid 194
  - -transforms a religious devotion 194
- equity
  - -everyone according to his share and right 201
- eternal-migration 23, 25
- Eve 91, 92
- everything means time 29

F

- Face
  - -all things perish except His 30
  - -faith
  - -is always endangered 188
- Fall, the
  - -beginning of the life of an aware, responsible and rebellious creature, the 91
  - -since 152
- fall of Abraham, the

- -from the highest peak of monotheism (tawhid) to the most inferior swamp of multitheism (shirk) 149
- falsity
  - -destiny of Husayn's ummah is that of Yazid, the 141
  - -Holy Quran becomes the banner of multitheism and even 'Ali is disarmed before it, the 141
  - -takes the intellect as a sword in one hand and the Divine Law as a shield in the other 141
- Family, the
  - -leave 'self' outside and join 47
  - -leave 'you-ness' and join 47
  - -of God 47
  - -of people 47
  - -sanctuary for , a 68
  - -will enter as if you have buried yourself in miqat 47
  - -will enter if you have become 'the people' 47
- Fannon, Franz 124
- fate of Muslim people 12
- Fatimah, peace be upon her, 8
- female slave (*see also* woman, Hajar) 50, 72
- *fitnah* (test furnace) 153
- forbidden
  - -eating the 91
- force
  - -despotism 202
  - -Pharaoh 202
  - -politics 202

G

- God
  - -Absolute of Absolutes 30
  - -Absolute Being 30
  - -Absolute Eternity 30
  - -Absolute Perfection 30
  - -and bread 16
  - -brings Mercy to the agedness, hopelessness, loneliness and anguish of His trustworthy Messenger 136
  - -did not want Isma'il to be slaughtered 157
  - -do not search for 44
  - -Eternal Primordiality 16
  - -grants Abraham's child to the female slave of Sarah 136
  - -Great Friend of humanity 26
  - -hajj is a movement from 'self' towards 13
  - -has forgiven you the slaughter of your Isma'il 156
  - -has invited you 41
  - -Infinite Perfection 16
  - -in the house of a black African, female slave 52
  - -is Absolute 48

  -is eternal journeying 25
  -is the heart of the universe 53
  -is migration 25
  -is more zealous of His Family 46
  -is orientation 25
  -is shapeless, colorless, without similarity 48
  -is the Director 16
  -is the qiblah 31
  -is without direction 48
  -is your destination 24
  -needs of, the 157
  -not the final point 25
  -not your resting place 24
  -of Abraham is not thirsty 157
  -of monotheism 51
  -philosophy of, the 157
  -sound of, the 41
  -special pupil 20
  -whatever form or conditions mankind selects is not 48
  -will pay the ransom for your Isma'il 171
God's Way, Upon
  -both are the same - upon the Way of God and upon the way of the masses 56
  -eternal dying to self, an 56
  -find flow to attain the sea 56
  -means the way of the masses 56
  -of Abraham 57
  -of Abraham pays the ransom 66
  -of monotheism 66
  -to put aside self-interests for the congregation 56

H

haj
  -becomes a 54
  -becomes his human 'self' 32
  -becomes his true 'self' 32
  -becomes one person - a human being 32
  -faces consciousness and justice 32
  -faces monotheism (tawhid) 32
  -faces towards the Absolute and the Truth 32
  -faces towards the Hereafter 32
  -faces the Spirit of God 32
  -had been alienated by coercion, wealth, position, land or blood 32
  -had felt his 'cash on hand' to be his self 32
  -had forgotten being human 32
  -perpetually becoming unto Him 84
  -perpetually moving towards Him 84

- -puts on the dress of ihram 32
- -resolver, a 32
- -responds to God's invitation with *labbayk* 54
- -turns away from ignorance and tyranny 32
- -turns away from multitheism (shirk) 32
- -turns away from the detention camps of the world 32
- -turns away from the relativities and expediences 32
- -turns away from the swamp 32

Hajar
- -abased by people 73
- -black, African, Ethiopian slave woman 52
- -black slave woman with a child at her bosom 73
- -black woman slave 49
- -buried near the 50
- -captive, slavewoman 73
- -does not sit awaiting a miracle 77
- -exiled by hatred 73
- -full of struggle 73
- -great heroine of faith of love 72
- -has taught us 58
- -her home 50
- -her search ends in failure 77
- -here you are 72
- -heroine of submission and contentment 73
- -homeless 73
- -House of God, the 50
- -in the role of 71
- -leaves the child to love and begins to search 77
- -like human beings 52
- -like movement 52
- -manifestation of submission 72
- -migrant in the midst of the mountains, a 73
- -migrant, responsible, struggling, searching, lover, faithful, bewildered, anguished 73
- -one God and the other 51
- -overwhelmed with effort 73
- -prisoner of remote mountains 73
- -Prometheus of the culture of Abraham 73
- -rejected by the aristocratic system 73
- -running in search of water 73
- -seeker of water 50
- -skirt of 50
- -solely with the power of faith 77
- -submits herself absolutely to Him 76

  - unknown soldier 51
  - upon her own feet 73
  - with absolute trust 77
  - with her will 73
  - without a society 73
  - without hope and yet hopeful 73
  - without support, without shelter 73
  - woman, a mother, lonely, a 73

hajj
  - allusion to the moment of the last farewell 23
  - appointment with God 24
  - clean the environment of your life, links, wealth and savings 23
  - consciously selected group movement towards God, a 16
  - continuous movement towards a constant direction and the whole world is this, a 72
  - Day of Reckoning 24
  - dissolution of the individual in the ummah 16
  - drama of creation, repentance, the 92
  - drama of disconnecting everything to eternity 24
  - embodies the stages it must pass through 15
  - embodies what humans must learn 15
  - everything God wished to say was spilled into the hajj 15
  - exercise in preparation of death, 24
  - existential course of the human being towards God 16
  - expressed in symbolic language 15
  - fixed order, precise coordination with time and social authenticity 16
  - flow 19
  - God of Abraham teaches you with the 76
  - how the individual transforms towards perfection 16
  - how to form the ummah 16
  - includes the course of history in particular, the transformative phases 15
  - includes the philosophy of existence 15
  - includes the plan of creation for mankind's genesis 15
  - includes the principles of external change 16
  - includes the world view of the philosophy of creation 15

-in monotheism's world view 7
-is a duty 174
-is a gathering 32
-is an implicit rule 13
-is a movement from self towards God with the people 13
-is a resurrection 32
-is similar to creation 17
-is similar to history 17
-is similar to maktab 17
-is similar to monotheism 17
-is similar to ummah 17
-is the combination of opposites 76
-is the solution to oppositions 76
-is totally resolve 133
-make up with those you have quarreled with 23
-make your last will and testament 24
-making an attempt 72
-model of humanity, a 16
-most indecent and illogical action 4
-movement 30
-movement and the direction of movement 19
-negates life 19
-negates repose 19
-negates something the goal of which is itself 19
-ninth (9th) of Dhihajjah 83
-not to intend the Ka'bah 84
-pay accounts 23
-pay your debts 23
-objective embodiment of that which is relevant, an 17
-of concepts 133
-rebellion against foolish determinism 19
- rebellion against this damned destiny 19
-relies upon the congregation 173
-remove hatred 23
-resolve, intention 19
-resolve on eternity 24
-ritual in two phases 83
-sacrifice self for God 16
-seek the forgiveness of others 23
-sign of the destiny of a human being 24
-sign of the return of mankind towards God 30
-symbolic drama of the philosophy of creation, a 16
-through its movements declares a message as the Quran does with words 191
-to act out monotheism in circumambulation 134
-to depart from the Ka'bah 84
-to sit and meditate on 175

  - -to think about death 13
  - -turning away from production for consumption, consumption for production 19
  - -turning away from vacillation, doubt, the rotation of life 19
  - -wash away stains 23
  - -which is monotheism's world view 7
- *halq* 17
- Hand of God
  - -sense it upon yours 58
- hand of life 28
- He
  - -absoluteness, eternity, non-direction 46
  - -has no End 24
  - -is Eternal 24
  - -is Infinite 24
  - -no Limit 24
  - -no Similarity 24
  - -only exists 42
  - -other than, all is wave, foam, lie 42
- heart of existence pulsates 42
- heaven
  - -which rains down revelation 21
- heirs of the Prophets 222ff
- Helpers 9
- herd of sheep
  - -flee from 26
- hero 17
- *hijr* of Is'mail
  - -skirt 49
- *hijrat* (migration)
  - -greatest command, the 51
  - -greatest deed, the 51
  - -you die here 23
  - -you go, a going without a return 23
- Him
  - -everything is 42
  - -near to 42
  - -to return to means 24
  - -you become 42
  - -you find only 42
  - -you see only 42
- His Hand
  - -God extended to you 58
- history
  - -blessed 9
  - -is the flow of the human being in the river bed of time 127
  - -overflowing with oppression and suppression 18
  - -philosophy of the 10
  - -unable to listen 154
- historic connection 16
- *hjr* (town, city) 52
- Holy Quran (*see* Quran)
- house
  - -burial place of a mother 50
  - -His 23
  - -of God 20, 26
  - -of the people 20, 26

- -of the self 20

Hugo, Victor 13

human being
- -and among all, a woman 51
- -angels prostrated before 20
- -at the sacred boundaries of prohibitions 37
- -a 'becoming' towards God 30
- -before whom the angels prostrated 25
- -but also a 'becoming' 30
- -but history, life and the anti-human social system has metamorphosized you, alienated you from your 'self' , from your primordial nature 20
- -child of Adam 37
- -condemned to strangeness 37
- -conversant with God 20
- -covenant of God in hand 20
- -created similar to God 20
- -Divine-like in nature 20
- -everything made submisssiv2 20
- -exiled to the earth 37
- -flees from palaces of power 26
- -flees from temples of deceit and degradation on 26
- -flees from treasures of wealth 26
- -full of muck 21
- -God's special pupil 20
- -God's special trust 20
- -God's vice gerent 20
- -has become an animal 21
- -has become hollow, absurd, empty 21
- -has become a lie 21
- -has become lust 21
- -has become money 21
- -has become pot-bellied 21
- -has in hand the number of years lost 21
- -has lived 21
- -He Himself is within your primordial nature 20
- -human being of today 218
- -in the beginning a dead corpse 21
- -in ihram 37
- -in search of a place 37
- -in the world of particles 20
- -is a meaning, an idea, an intellectual, subjective and logical concept 55
- -is a sure abode 25
- -is like a honey bee 151
- -knapsack of God's trust 20
- -loser, a 21
- -loser to enslavement, abjectness and needs 26
- -made a covenant to rebel against anything that is other than He 25
- -made a covenant to wor-

ship God alone 25
- mingled with disgrace 21
- moans from nostalgia, from exile, from alienation 21
- mucky, putrid clay 21
- Names of God taught in one's heart 20
- noblest of His creatures, the 51
- no longer remiss but released 37
- not immune from a fall 150
- not just 'being' 30
- part of the Family of God 20
- passes through three phases 161
- placed erect 20
- rejected of God 37
- resolves to escape 26
- returned in repentance 37
- sacrifice of injustice and ignorance 26
- servant of idols 25
- Spirit of God within one's 'being-ness' 21
- taught all the Names 20
- taught with the Pen 20
- time is one's total capital 20
- took the path of history 20
- trampled upon by fear and greed 26
- under an obligation 37
- when the individual is annihilated the...remains 56
- who has had the Spirit of God blown within 20
- who knows the Truth in this way 151
- whose tunes are from the lips of others 21
- with whom God made a covenant 20
- work? eating from one's capital 21
- worshipper of the taghut 25
- you have been a 20
- you have been a child of Adam 20

human existence, opposition 147

humanity
- always victim of last deceit 170
- intermediate link between animal and human being 147
- intermediate link between captivity and salvation 147
- intermediate link between deliverance and responsibility 147
- intermediate link between earth and heaven 147
- intermediate link between instinct and consciousness of self 147
- intermediate link between

love of self and love of God 147
-intermediate link between nature and God 147
-intermediate link between presence and absence 147
-intermediate link between remaining and advancing 147
-intermediate link between tendency towards self and tendency towards God 147
-intermediate link between that which exists and that which must be 147
-intermediate link between to be and to become 147
-intermediate link between world and future life 147
-transformative phases 15
-tragedy of 197
human manifestation
-of Divine Oneness 30
-of fear, enthusiasm, excitement, astonishment, wonder and ecstasy 30
humanness
-classes divided into sects, groups and families 28
-divided into races 28
-each again into position, reputation, degrees and honary titles 28
-nations divided into classes 28
-races divided into nations 28
humility
-and humbleness 44
hypocrisy
-Balam b. Ba'ur 202ff
-deception 202
-faith 202

I

Iblis
-accomplice, an 158
-again hopes and covets the sorrowful Abraham 153
-attempts to darken and weaken the explicit message of God 153
-begins to work wherever he finds 153
-blows a logical reason into his intellect 147
-calls you to it 153
-covets him 153
-factors of 161
-grief in human beings makes them delicious mouthfuls for the claws and teeth of 153
-grow from the inside 186
-in the front of Mina stands face to face with God 149
-is present wherever he smells human scent 153
-it will return through the

window 186
- -only agent who, the 91
- -only angel who refused to prostrate 170
- -lies in ambush 153
- -logic of...is always the same 153
- -kindles the affection for the child 146
- -must employ greater vigilance 148
- -revengeful enemy from the moment since the Fall of Adam 153
- -scent of grief intoxicates 153
- -seven-colored enemy with seventy traps 187
- - prevents you from doing your duty 153
- -went to Eve 91
- -will destroy you in 'me' 186
- -will regain power in peace 186
- -you expelled 170

'id
- -celebrated before the battle begins 122

ideology 16

ideological 16
- -unity 16
- -war 13

idol(s)
- -are accomplices 163
- -are manifestation of one existence - Iblis 162
- -are three independent idols 163
- -call you from servitude to God to servitude to them 164
- -do not allow human beings to perform their Divine mission 161
- -dominate over you, place your neck in a rope 164
- -each has a name, title and base but all three are accomplices 162
- -empty your pockets 164
- -first opposes knowledge 161
- -have turned the social realization of the religion of monotheism into 163
- -last opposes love, faith 161
- -lead a person to the worship of their 'Isma'il' 164
- -middle opposes consciousness 161
- -monotheism calls the three manifestations of them 164
- -multitheism justifies them 164
- -negate and metamorphosize the message of truth 162
- -paralyze human beings 163
- -paralyze your intellect and

  lead you into darkness 164
  -place your neck in a rope 164
  -prevent 'becoming Abraham-like' 161
  -prevent human beings from moving towards perfection 162
  -stand before the way of a responsible human being 162
  -stone 188
  -stone them 164
  -three 161
  -three bases of Cain - coercion, wealth and asceticism 164
  -three independent idols 162
  -three powerful factors of Iblis 161
  -three principles of Iblis 161
  -three secret negative phases 161
  -waiting in ambush for human beings 161
idol-worship
  -free it from 43
ihram (*see also* cloth).
  -clothes of people 37
  -clothes of rebirth 37
  -clothes of piety and death 37
  -clothes of resurrection 37
  -clothes of unity 37
  -colorless, patternless clothes 37
  -every ihram could be your 32
  -everyone takes a foreigner in place of a relative 32
  -everyone takes a stranger as a friend 32
  -everyone wears each other's shoes 32
  -infinitive used as a noun 31
  -noun for a kind of dress 31
  -to forbid 37
  -to make sacred 31
  -white clothes 37
  -white dress of resurrection day 36
ijtihad 6
iltibaz 27
image of God 21
Imam Sadiq 128
imamate
  -has become a recourse 4
implicit precepts
  -content of hajj is also implicit 15
  -expressed through movement 15
  -language is a coded, symbolic one 15
implicit verses
  -blossom still further 14
  -complicated, intricate weaves

14
  -conceal themselves from the weak-sighted 14
  -full of the mystery of expression 14
  -have made the words of the Quran a simple message 14
  -His Book 14
  -Holy Quran 14
  -hundred-fold, colorful kaledascope 14
  -in every age, with every discovery open a door to the endless inwardness 1
  -like the heart of the mysterious oyster 14
  -multi-dimensioned 14
  -richest and most fundamental meanings 14
  -words lead the mind to various ways 14
individual worship
  -to develop the self in reaching towards ithar 56
infinite movement 24
infinitely
  -great 13, 18
  -tiny 13, 18
intellectual, an
  -feels responsible to his people 14
intellectual complexities 14
intellectual-like grumblings 6
intellectual, real 216ff
'intention
  -revolutionary 20
Islam
  -addresses people directly 6
  -anything more oppressed in ...than the hajj 18
  -being compatible with:
    -civilization 1
    -development 1
    -material power 1
    -scientific progress 1
    -spirit of intellectual challenges 1
  -clear that not referring to the degeneration and natural changes of 3
  -compare 'what it was' and 'what it has become' 2
  -comparing the nature of 2
  -conscious intellectual is directly responsible for it 6
  –cradle of 9
  -degree of deviation of a truth should be measured with the fate of 2
  -destiny in hands of religious scholars 5
  -evaluate it from the mission it bears for the salvation of humanity 1
  -fate of Islam in relation to 18
  -fate of Shi'ism in Islam is

the same as Islam to other religions 2
-has all hidden and other manifest material and spiritual possibilities 2
-has had a group of the most powerful and elite assigned 2
-has had those familiar with psychological and 2
-has had those familiar with social mores assigned 2
-has had those familiar with the role of celebrities and symbols assigned 3
-has had those familiar with the weak and sensitive and etc aspects assigned 2
-has taught us that Allah hates a holy egotist – a person who neglects the people 178
-has undertaken a scientific study of the culture and people to gain 3
-historical destiny contradictory, inconsistent 2
-history of 9
-in human beings it is the Imam 15
-in movement or action it is the hajj 15
-in words is the Quran 15
-is a mission, not a special subject in philosophy or science 3
-makes everything possible and everything has been done 2
-manifested in the prophetic mission of Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household 1
-more conscious 1
-more powerful 1
-no mission more progressive in 1
  -being oriented to the people 1
  -considering nature 1
  -more compatible with 1
  -movement 1
  -responsibility 1
  -seeking dignity 1
  -seeking of human ideals 1
  -self-awareness 1
  -social growth 1
  -social insight 1
  -spirit of longing for justice 1
  -tending towards reality 1
-no mission which has progressed towards degeneration like 2
-not 'in Him' but 'to Him' 25
-not annihilation but movement 25

  - -not the tradition of human beings 25
  - -of Abraham, peace be upon him and Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household 178
  - -of Abu Sufyan 190
  - -poustin of 18
  - -power has reversed it 2, 3
  - -profound understanding of 3
  - -returning towards God 25
  - -reversal done through a single policy 5
  - -reversal in 3
  - -reversal not a result of any other circumstances, the 2
  - -reversal not a result of confrontation with foreign cultures 3
  - -reversal not a result of influence of tribal 3
  - -reversal not an accident 3
  - -reversal not born from natural, unconscious elements in history 3
  - -reversal very consciously 3
  - -school of Abrahamic monotheism, the 1
  - -study the problems of 176
  - -understand the hajj to recognize the human being 18
  - -understand to understand the meaning of hajj 18
  - -way to glory of 6

Islamic ideology
  - -is monotheism, jihad and hajj 4
  - -creates responsibility 4
  - -creates social power 3
  - -guarantees consciousness 3
  - -guarantees liberty 3
  - -guarantees the glory of the believers 3

Islamologists 2

Islamology
  - -practical and theoretical 12

Isma'il
  - -bond that binds him to servitude to himself 154
  - -fruit of an adventurous life 136
  - -fruit of your heart 139
  - -glad tiding ofhope after bitter despair 136
  - -great sacrifice 154
  - -life of Abraham's soul 136
  - -light of your eyes 139
  - -has fallen into danger 147
  - -only fruit of Abraham's life 137
  - -only young boy of an old father 136
  - -particle of your soul 139
  - -realizing his father's pitiful state 155
  - -reason for your existence 139

  -sacrifice 154
  -totality of love, hope and pleasure of Abraham's union 137
  -was not only a son for a father 136
  -was the reward for a century of suffering 136
  -who is nothing other than absolute freedom 155
  -young man of monotheism 155
  young must die 152
ʿIsmaʿil', your
  -bring back 172
  -darkens your understanding 158
  -deafens your ears before the truth 158
  -infects your heart 158
  -is your family, position or 136
  -is your wealth or prestige 136
  -making you a plaything of Iblis 135
  -might be yourself 136
  -person or thing or state, condition or even a weak point 135
-was his son and such a son for such a father 136
-whatever causes you to flee 134
  -whatever has become an attachment 158
  -whatever has become an obstacle 158
  -whatever has enchained your freedom 158
  -whatever leads you to justification 135
  -whatever is attached to you 134
  -whatever justifies rebellion before the command of faith 159
  -whatever weakens you upon the way of faith 134
  -whatever you have set your heart on 134
  -who is yours 134
    -your fame 158
    -your husband 158
    -your occupation 158
    -your passion 158
    -your position 158
    -your situation 158
    -your son and your only son 158
    -your wife 158
Ismaʿil and Abraham
  -one agents of God 67, 229
  -architects of the most ancient temple of monotheism 67, 229
  -one passed through the fire and the other through the

altar of sacrifice 67, 229
-responsible for the masses 67, 229
-thirst 81
ithar
-joining the congregation and giving up 'self' 54
-leaving the self among the circumambulating masses 54
-self-sacrifice, to give of what one oneself needs 54

J

jamarah 'ula (first idol) 131
jamarah 'uqba (third idol) 131
jamarah wusta'(second idol) 131
Jews 9
jihad
-against the temptations of Iblis 68
-akbar
-be in 188
-does not end after you prevail over the enemy 188
-forgotten word, left to history 4
-only means of achieving power 188
-philosophy of *amr ma'ruf* 4
-short way to bring you to rulership 188
-which has become a bludgeon for excommunication of a friend 4
jinn 212 ff
journey
-to fight 9
-to invite 9
justification (s)
-correct 141
-erroneous 141
-final deceit of the human being who is both conscious and responsible 146
-jurisprudential 1456
-looking for a means of escape when responsibility becomes heavy 145
-means of escape 141
-most tragic kind 141
-satanic 146
-searching for a solution to both halt and remain 146
-to choke the voice of reproach 146
-to give a rightful visage to something which is not rightful 146
-to narcotize the conscience 146
-when a right confronts life 145
-when companions are few 145
-when the faith of a human

being calls out but the heart is reluctant 141
-when the road is an up hill one 145
-when the seeking of a right develops inconveniences 145
-work of becomes more difficult 148
-worst kind, the 141

K

Ka'bah
-are buried facing it 44
-before my sight 44
-before you 45
-the center of it 43
-the center of love 56
-constant point in the center 53
-cry on this night of tyranny 68
-cube , a 48
-desire for is oppressive 43
-directed towards the skirt of an African slave 50
-direction for our daily and nightly ritual prayers 44
-empty room 45
-enormous courtyard 45
-eternal constancy 53
-eyes fixed on a bridge 45
-faces all, faces none, everywhere and nowhere, all directions yet no direction, God 49
-first House of the People 67
-free from the reign of tyrants 41
-free it from idol-worship 43
-grows close and closer 41
-hijr, the 49
-His mystery 49
-His sanctuary 46
-House of the Free 67
-inside the 49
-in the center, a hollow cube 45
-in the midst of a whirlpool 53
-is a roof 46
-is a sign 46
-is close by 44
-is directionless 48
-is the qiblah 45
-it is not the end, it is the beginning 46
-leave 84
-liberty 67
-meeting place 46
-most ancient temple of monotheism 67
-mystery of monotheism 50
-no architecture, no art, no beauty, no inscription, no tile 45

  - -now, the 44
  - -of love, worship 67
  - -only shows direction 46
  - -opposite you, the qiblah 44
  - -own home, our grave 44
  - -outside the 49
  - -pile of dark, rough stones 45
  - -place of the covenant 46
  - -place secured for those pursued 68
  - -this qiblah of existence, 44
  - -this qiblah until you reach it 85
  - -sanctuary, a mystery, a 41
  - -sanctuary, clean and free for humanity 68
  - -secret of God in the universe 48
  - -shelter for the shelterless 68
  - -short, arched wall facing the 49
  - -stones from Mt. 'Ajun 48
  - -sun in the center 53
  - -this absolute non-direction only directed towards her skirt 50
  - -torch of this dark night 68
  - -to the west, an addition 49
  - -towards it we pray 44
  - -we die facing it 44

kaledascope 14

Karun 165ff, 198
  - -stone for wealth belongs to God (24:33)

Khadijah 8

khanas 167, 203ff
  - -greatest evil and enemy of the people 198
  - -power which brings temptation into the hearts 167
  - -satan, a 167

'kissed a stone' in allegiance 12

knowledge ('Arafat)
  - -beginning of consciousness 93
  - -found in understanding reality 99
  - -has no good or bad 99
  - -is collective 99
  - -is the beginning 90
  - -is the story of Adam 90
  - -its name - science 99
  - -liberty from the captivity of nature 93
  - -mirror, a 99
  - -objective relationship 100
  - -of nature and man 93
  - -phase of understanding 100
  - -relationship between the mind and an eternal reality 100
  - -requires sight and light 100
  - -without consciousness and love 94

kufr
  - -depravity 207

L

labbayk (Here I am) 23, 41 43
lamb (s) 26,27,29,35,41
land of humanity 27
last will and testament 24
libas (*see* clothes)
life
  -day, the preliminary of night 19
  -flat and inconsequential game 19
  -futile comings and goings 19
  -major task is growing old 19
  -monotonous and foolish fluctuation 19
  -night, the preliminary of day 19
  -number of years you have lost 21
  -occupied with cool and repetitive games 19
  -profession - being a loser 21
  -real consequences is deterioration 19
  -rotating movement, a 19
  -thread of 19
  -torture, a 19
  -useless rotation, a 19
  -watching 19
  -when you attain what you do not have, nihilism 19
  -when you do not have, all is anguish 19
life and death
  -change 30
  -contradiction 30
  -direction 30
  -movement 30
  -perfection 30
living dead 19
longing for the truth
  -in surrender to the Truth 155
  -which is nothing other than absolute freedom 155
love
  -armed with 61
  -can replace non-availabilities 61
  -child left to 77
  -described with movement 60
  -finding water through 78
  -has reached its peak 60
  -if the spirit recognizes 61
  -Ka'bah is the center of 60
  -kills the inner self with the power that 155
  -lean on 81
  -of faith of 72
  -only with 72
  -rains upon the desert and dampens the earth 42
  -raise your head in 79
  -secure your life with 61
  -so desired 73

-trust of 72
-trust 61
-will give you a miracle 82
-your feet sink into 42

M

make intention known
  -as a date whose seed conceives 33
  -be 34
  -be as a shell surrounding the seed of your faith 34
  -become aware of God 34
  -become aware of people 34
  -become a being 34
  -become conscious of self 34
  -for every action has a reaction 56
  -for God, not self 56
  -for Truth, not expediency 56
  -freely select consciousness of self 34
  -glow 34
  -kindle a flame in the darkness of your heart 34
  -mature as the seed matures 34
  -overflow 34
  -plant the seed of consciousness of self in your conscience 34

  -to become conscious 56
  -to know what you are doing 56
  -to know why you are doing it 56
Mahdi 4
mahshar, resurrection 103
maktab (school of thought and action) 16
mankind's unity (*see* unity)
man of truthfulness
  -consciencizes the existence of the Truth 151
  -feels that which is right as he finds his existential self 150
  -feels that which is right as the radiation of the sun 150
mariq 194
martyr
  -eternal, living being, an 55
  -is present, an observer, a visible and objective example 55
  -one who perpetually exists 55
martyrdom
  -Isma'il-like 158
  -means presence, means life 55
  -means whatever or whoever is perpetually present 55
  -with...become a witness 55
Mash'ar al-Haram (sacred con-

sciousness)
  -has the countenance of Islam 109
  -mountainous camp 114
  -pause to deliberate 102
  -pause to gather arms 102
  -place of the anxious thirst of the heart to attain ithar 114
  -place of the only army in the world where every soldier is a commander 11
  -place of whisperings of love 114
  -Sacred Waymark 98
masses
  -continuously slaughtered at the feet of palaces of power 66
  -slaughtered at the threshold of deceiving, humiliating temples 66
'me'
  -is a class 27
  -is a family 27
  -is a group 27
  -is an individual 27
  -is not a human being 27
  -is a race 27
  -is a situation 27
  -is a value 27
metamorphosized 20, 25
metamorphosizing religion 197
Message, the
  -is the Message of Truth 153
  -O Abraham 156
mi'ad (place of the covenant) 46
Middle Eastern people 2
migration
  -from the 'house of self' 20
  -Hajar-like deed, a 52
  -Hajar-like movement, a 52
  -to go from savageness to civilization 52
  -to move from kufr to Islam 52
  -to the 'House of God' 20
  -towards another 20
  -towards eternity 20
  -towards 'Him' 20
Mina
  -final destination of your migration, 188
  -front of your victories and glories 188
  -land of God and Iblis 118
  -land of your faith and your love 188
  -longest pause 117
  -place of battle 129
  -place of your desires and wishes 188
miqat (place of the appointed time)
  -bear witness to your own death 30
  -be resurrected in the de-

  sert 30
  - be the pilgrim to your own grave 30
  - bury your self in it 30
  - create the ultimate fate of your life 30
  - die in the place of the appointed time 30
  - dig the grave of your 'meness' 30
  - everything means time 29
  - human manifestation of Divine Oneness 30
  - human manifestation of fear, etc. 30
  - means movement in a place 29
  - noun of time becomes a name of place 29
  - places means time and never repose 29
  - place of blending together 30
  - place of resurrection 30
  - place of the day of judgment 30
  - place of unity 30

misses
  - truth of religion (*mariq*), the 194

mission (s)
  - addresses people directly 6
  - conscious intellectual is directly responsible for it, a 6
  - history's religious 1
  - Islam's 3
  - of Islam 12
  - of Islam for humanity 10
  - restlessness of 207

moan
  - from alienation 21
  - from exile 21
  - from nostalgia 21

monasticism
  - the monasticism of my religion is jihad 54

monotheism
  - beats you, pounds you, negates you, dissolves you 62
  - belittles you, makes you bend your head in servitude 62
  - calls you 62
  - calls you a member of the Divine Family 62
  - causes you to place your forehead on the earth in prostration 62
  - discussed removed from life and alien to people 4
  - emphasis upon proving the existence of God 4
  - opposes multitheism 163
  - sees you as the vice-gerent of God 62
  - solved at the command of the enemy or at least to

his benefit 4
-sometimes it elevates you 62
-sometimes it makes you nothing and sometimes it makes you everything 62
-sometimes it pulls you to putrid clay 62
-it does not bear you being you 62
-takes you to the solitary sanctuary of God 62
-what it does to a person 62
mother (*see also* woman, female slave, Hajar, skirt)
-good, a 51
-perpetual place of circumambulation of humanity 51
Mount of Rahman 95, 98
movement
-from self towards God 13
-life, motion, direction, idea, hope, faith and monotheism 66
-not in Him but to Him 25
-on a straight line 77
-rotating 19
Muhammad, peace and the mercy of God be upon him and his household
-follower of 108
Muhassar 118
mujahid thinker
--believes as long as minds are not moved, nothing will move 166
-sees ignorance, intellectual solidification and factors which cause sleep 166
-intellectual combatant, an 165
multi-dimensioned 14
multitheism (shirk)
-earthly religion, the 162
-justifier of the status quo, the 163
-monotheism verses social system changed to 163
-narcotizer of the people's consciousness of self 163
--supra-structure which compromises 163
multitheistic society
-attains monotheism when one becomes all and all become one 31
Muslim (*see also* pause after 'id)
-feels responsible to his faith, 5
-intellectual 5
-of the world 176ff
-people 5
-society 5
-ummah 12
Muslim intellectual
-best guide of the way to glory is the one chosen by the enemy for our humilia-

tion 6
-bringing back the Quran to the city 6
-bringing down the Quran from the shelf 6
-can he remain silent 5
-can he sit for further centuries by using the excuse that religious scholars are responsible for the destiny of Islam and Shi'ism 5, 6
-enemy could not destroy the Quran so he closed it 6
-enemy made 'the Book' a 'holy object' 6
-greatest anguish is to observe his society is now so dying and becoming blind 5
-has a double responsibility 5
-is the way of salvation of the people to seek recourse in western ideology 5
-reciting the Quran for the living 6
-return from the way the enemy has led us 6
-should read the Holy Quran 6
-suffers from the degeneration of his people 5
-suffers from the metamorphosis of the sublime values of his faith 5
-to bring back the Quran to our life and religion which will bring back monotheism as a world view 6
-what is his responsibility to Islam, Shi'ism and Muslim society and Shi'ites 5
-when the Quran is read for the living monotheism, hajj, jihad, imamate, martyrdom, and anticipation will again find their life-spirit 6
-when the Quran is read, Muslims will again find their spirit and life 6
-whether responsible to the people or to God 6
-will this bring salvation to his people5
Muslim mujahids
-entangled in their countries with colonialism, exploitation, cruelty, poverty, ignorance, superstitition, hypocrisy and corruption 175
Muzdalifah 104
muhajir (migrator) 51
mysterious oyster 14
mystery of expression 14

N
nakith (those who break their allegiance) 194

nas, al people 123
nihilism, a futile philosophy 19
Nimrod, in pursuit 35
niyyah (*see also* making intention known) 33

O
objective embodiment 17
obligation, an
  -accepted at heighth of free choice and awareness 37
  -accepted of own free will 37
  -free choice and awareness 37
  -you are in ihram 37
  -you are responsible 37
  -under 37
oppressor (*qasit*) 26, 194

P
pain, treatment for the 5
palaces of power, built from plundered treasures 66
pause after ʻid
  -a plan should be prepared for a world-wide campaign against 176
  -aim at attaining a spirit of harmony, understanding 176
  -aim at achieving liberty of captive and oppressed Muslims 176
  -aim at recognizing and understanding each other 176
  -aim at strengthening unity 175
  -all have gathered having been illuminated with the same faith 175
  -all have gathered with the warmth of the same love 176
  -all should come to know each other 176
  -all should discuss problems and seek each other's assistance 176
  -all should discuss the conspiracies against them 176
  -all should discuss the enmity of the great powers of the world 176
  -all should plan and discuss the common dangers 176
  -discuss our needs, difficulties and ideals 175
  -discuss with fellow-sympathizers, fellow-sufferers, fellow companions 175
  -fight against diseases which threaten the ummah like ignorance, etc 176
  -find a way to the original

source of Islam 176
-Muslims of the world should study the world of Islam 176
-Muslims of the world should study Islam in their contemporary age 176
-plan against dispersion, blind prejudice, propagation,
superstitiions 176
-scholars from Muslim countries sit and discuss 175
-sit and meditate on the hajj-175
-those present entangled with colonialism, etc. 175
-three day forced 175
-time for action 175
-time for ideology 175
'pausing'
hesitating 88
-is not remaining 88
-upon the Way in movement 88
pebbles 110,111
Pen, the 20
people, the
-all in a single color 30
-all in a single pattern 30
-are but one ummah 167
-beloved of God, the 46
-Family of God, the 46
-have taken on form disregarding race, family, class 30
-in relation to which an idol is built and taghut worshipped 197
-no one re-finding the self 30
-no one re-recognizing the other 30
-spirits who have been resurrected 30
-victims
-who all enjoy one culture 173
-who have come from all parts of the world 173
-victims
-who are directly addressed 6

perpetual becoming 24
Pharaoh 165ff, 198
philosophy
-of creation 17
-of existence 15, 16
-of submission 4, 5
-stone for judgment is only God's (6:57)
pilgrim 8, 12, 13
place of the appointed time
-edge of a great change 33
-nothing and no one is absent 37
-revolutionary alteration 33
-transition, a 33

place of the covenant (*mi'ad*) 46
places of pause
  -three 95
place
  -also movement 26
  -means time and never repose 29
  -of blending together 30
  -of no water and no life 177
  -of pause 30
  -of resurrection 30
  -of the Day of Judgment 30
  -of unity 30
political combatant
  -sees Pharaoh prevails in a despotic, military and fascist system 165
politicians 2
political solidarity 16
possibilities
  -spiritual and material, 2
poustin 18
praise, blessings and dominion
  -negating deception, exploitation and despotism 41
prejudicial positionings 7
primordial nature (*fitrat*) 20, 42, 58
principles of eternal change 16
prison
  -in one's nature 126
  -of instincts 126
  -of self 126
proclaim the hajj 23
Prophet, the
  -destiny of 7
  -land of 7
  -master of the greatest Divine mission 166
  -responsible for leadership, consciousness and salvation of mankind 166
  -take refuge from khanas 167
  -you are not secure 166
prohibition(s) (*muharamat*)
  -anything that distinguishes you from others 39
  -anything that recalls you to you 39
  -anything that represents who you are 39
  -anything which is a sign of you, a sign of your system of life 39
  -at the sacred boundaries of 37
  -sign of your social system 39
  -twenty-four prostrations 39
  -whatever is not human 39
  -whatever is reminiscent of the world 39
  -whatever leads you to your past, buried life 39
  -whatever reminds you of the day to day things 39
  -whatever smells of your life prior to miqat 39

  - -whatever you thought you could not leave behind 39
- prosperous
  - -are prosperous from their mother's womb 199
- prostration (*sajdah*) 36
- proud
  - -do not become 137, 138
- pseudo-human machine 212
- putrid clay 25, 63
- putrid corpse 21

Q

- Quran
  - -amazes both a bedouin nomad and a learned philosopher 14
  - -artistic miracle 14
  - -bringing it back from the cemetery to the city 6
  - -bringing it down from the shelf 6
  - -declares a message with words 191
  - -depths of its intellectual complexities 14
  - -end never reached by the searching mind nor the truth-seeking heart 14
  - -endless inwardness 14
  - -everything possible in its absence 5
  - -if brought back to life and religion it will bring back monotheism 6
  - -last words 191
  - -offered to the spirits of the dead 5
  - -put on the shelf 5
  - -recommended to be read in total during the hajj 191
  - -studied as a religious textbook 6
  - -taken from the city to the cemetery 5
  - -were not able to destroy it so closed it instead 6
  - -when deserts the life of Muslim people and Islam 5
  - -where it ends 165

R

- racial unity 16
- rat 26, 27,29,35,41
- rebel against anything other than He 25
- rebellion
  - -free from everything and everybody other than You 35
- rebellious creature
  - -eternally condemned to suffer anguish and thirst 91
  - -extinguishless anxiety of separation, the 91
  - -feeling strangeness and captivity in nature 91
  - -free bird of heaven in the

cage of the earth, the 91
-feeling strangeness and captivity in nature 91
-in anguish 91
-instinctive anxiety of sin, the 91
-moaning reed flute, the 91
reed bed 21
religious
-jurisprudence 6, 10
-scholars 5
resolve on Him 23
-to escape 26
responsibility
-negate, deny and disavow 5
responsible, all are 24
responsible
- for His Trust 21
-to God 6
-to the people 6
-you are 24
retribution 10
reversal of Islam
-put the Quran on the shelf 5
-take the Book of Supplications from the cemetery to the city 5
-take the Holy Quran from life and the city to the cemetery 5
-when the Quran deserts the life of Muslims 5
-when the Quran deserts Islam 5
-with a single policy 5
revolt
-means consciousness of self 91
-means freedom before the forces of nature 91
-means selection, then responsibility 91
-will before the Will of God, a 91
revolution
-is still endangered 187
-is threatened 186
revolutionary responsibility 4
revolutionary ummah
-armed mujahids 113
-its fighters worship 113
-its intellectuals fight 113
-its worshippers think 113
right, a
-along side life 145
-confronts life 145
-in the midst of the flow and course of life 145
right, that which is
-enflames his being 150
-in his emotions 150
-in the depths of his primordial nature 150
-senses and finds the illumination of 150
-Truth, the 150
ritual prayer of ihram in miqat 35, 36

ritual prayers
  -in full 47
  -prevents 95
rival wife 49
ruling class, one 203

S
sacred area,
  -His 46
  -immune from pursuance 42
  -no place for 'you' 47
  -Makkah is 42
  -of God 72
  -war and aggression forbidden 42
  -within His House 46
  -within His sanctuary 46
sacred boundaries 37
  -land 69
  -month 101
  -mosque 43, 69, 101
  -place 69
  -society 172
  -time 37, 69
sacred consciousness
  -born from knowledge gives birth to love 101
  -that which is preserved in an environment of chastity , piety and purity 100
sacrifice
  -in order to remove the knife from the throat of the masses 66
  -of a human being for God is forbidden 156
  -of injustice 26
  -your Isma'il 66
salvation, way of 5
Sarah 72, 135,136
Sartre 125
School
  -of Abraham 12
  -of thought 3
  -of thought and action of monotheism 12
Seal of Prophets
  -greatest infallible person 150
  -of monotheism 150
Search, the
  -between Safa and Marwah 71
  -distance of more than 300 meters 71
  -is a struggle 71
  -traverse seven times 71
search
  -absolute intellect 75
  -all you 75
  -humanity's free will 75
  -intellect 76
  -is flesh 76
  is humanity 76
  -is the pleasure of living 76
searching movement 76
season
  -appointment with He Who created you as a human being 26

- -flee from palaces of power, treasures of wealth, temples of deceit 26
- -flee from this herd of sheep whose shepherd is a wolf 26
- -give way to 23
- -go to the appointed time with the great friend of humanity 26
- -go to the place of the covenant at the appointed time 25
- -masses have an appointment with God 23
- -moment of meeting 23
- -month of Dhihajjah 23
- -one must go with people23
- -release yourself from this filthy, disgraceful narrow life of this world 23
- -resolve on Him with the sign of the eternal migration of 23
- -save yourself from your suffocating and closed individuality 23
- -time has ripened 25
- -time of meeting draws near 25

seeking of paradise
- -apart from people is an ugly, monk-like selfishness 177
- -apart from people is materialism based on credit 177

self
- -in a red death 55
- -in a revolutionary way 55
- -stilled marsh of 21
- -will be annihilated in a red death 55

self sacrifice (*ithar*)
- -to give of what one oneself needs 54

servitude
- -and salvation 16
- -attaining great heights through 44

seven times
- -ascend the hill of Safa 79
- -hurry in search of water 79
- -exactly as in circumambulation 79

seven
- -means my circumambulation around God is infinite 61
- -not six plus one 61
- -recalls the creation of the universe 61
- -times 71

sheep
- -to be sacrificed 139
- -shepherd is a wolf 26

Shi'ism
- progressive dimensions
  - are imamate, 'Ashura and anticipation 4

  -inspire a liberation seeking spirit 4
  -inspire revolutionary responsibility 4
  -inspire the most sublime type of human leadership 4
shirk
  -is a religion 197
  -opium of the people 197
  -religion in the hands of earthly gods -khanas 98
  -religion ruling history 197
shroud, put on 28
shrouded, the
  -agitated flood, 30
  -people, the 30
  -white clothed 30
sight to the blind 5
sign(s)
  -this is the boundary of the sacred area 42
silence
  -contemplation, love 44
  -in His presence 43
  -have reached His House 43
  -that is, you have arrived 43
single policy 5
six directions 48
skein of your being 20
skirt (*see also* woman, female slave, Hajar) 50
slave
  -so humble that 49
slave woman
  -addressed by God 72
  -alone 72
  -first heroine in the drama of the hajj 72
  -left her habitated town 72
  -manifestation of the most magnificient and dearest of values of God 72
  -Messengers of God 72
  -most conspicious figure 72
  -mother of the great Prophets of God 72
  -only with love 72
  -took her nursing baby 72
snake
  -which sheds it s skin 88
'someone'
  -do not be 28
sound of the footsteps of the sun 122
space
  -filled with God 42
  -open your wings in 46
  -overflows with God 42
special trust 20
spirit
  -of God 20, 23
  -of longing for justice 1
  -of intellectual challenges 1
spiritual center of the world
  -gnostics 4
  -richness 14
Station of Abraham

-Abraham stood 62
-piece of stone 62
-standing in the 67
staying in God 25
story, the
  -ascension of love 157
  -concerns the perfection of humanity 157
  -elevation of the Spirit 157
  -freedom from the narrow straits of selfishness 157
  -freedom from the prison of instincts 157
  -of this religion 157
strategy 16
struggle against war, discriminations 96
Sufism 25
sublime values 5
Sunnis 7
sunrise 17
sunset 17
swamp
  -of your existence 21
symbolic drama 16, 17
symbolic language 15

T

taghut , an arrogant, despotic ruler who rebels against God 25,35,120
taqsir (cutting a bit of hair or a nail), 17, 81
tashrigh (three days in Mina after the Sacrifice) 224
tawaf al-nisa (circumambulation of women which is the last ritual when one undertakes the greater hajj and which makes husbands and wives lawful to each other) 225
tawhid
  -and shirk are living realities 197
  -and shirk are not just two philosophical views 197
  -condemned religion of history 197
  -in the service of shirk 198
  -blood of people 197
theater
  -in which one person plays all the roles 17
temples of deceit and degradation , free from 26
temptations (*see waswasah*)
theologicans 2
Thou
  -art caressing a friend 36
  -Lord of everyone 36
  -Master and Owner of the Day of Resurrection 36
  -my only and sole Beloved 36
  -my sole and only Helper 36
  -to Whom praise belongs 36

thread of life 19
thread of self 20
throw away
  -all colors 28
  -all ornaments 28
  -all patterns 28
  -all signs 28
time, course of
  –ages 14
  -erodes 14
  -gives birth to everything 14
  -kills 14
time has ripened 25
time of meeting draws near 25
time, your total capital 21
town
  -mountainous spirals of 43
traditional centers of learning 4,5,6
tragedy of humanity
  -death and abjectness of the people with the capital resources of life and the honor of the people 197
  -is the enslavement of people with the sole claim of freedom of the people 197
  -of alienation 213
  -of humanity 125
transformation
  -towards perfection 16
transition, a
  -from covered to uncovered 33
  -from daily clothes to the clothes of eternity 33
  -from hypocrisy, deception, deceit, degree, position, class, race to truth and sincerity 33
  -from living to love 33
  -from self to God 33
  -from slavery to freedom 33
  -from the clothes of carelessness and recklessness to the clothes of self-sacrifice committment and the ihram, the 33
trinity
  -that has ruled over history: deception, exploitation and despotism 41
  -this disgraceful triangle 199ff
truth
  -means Eternal Movement 24
  -means movement towards Absolute Perfection 24
  -means moving towards the Absolute 24

U
ummah, an
  -Abraham was 31
  -accepts the sovereignity of the morning 120
  -being slaughtered 201

-departure towards a qiblah 31
-gathering not 'to be' but 'to become', 31
-great stream of 128
-human beings 17
-ideological society 17
-is a society upon the way 31
-model society whcih Islam wishes to establish among human beings 17
- -monotheistic society, a 31
-movement towards a destination 31
-not for prosperity but for perfection 31
-not for tranquility but for movement 31
-not rule but imamate 31
-not the people of blood and dust 184
-of monotheism is the ummah of ideology and jihad 184
-servants who carry the mission of freedom of human beings upon their shoulders 184
-servants who so realize the meaning of freedom that they are bound to free themselves from Pharaoh 184

-*umm* means resolve 31
-when the individual negates 'me' and becomes 'us' 31
-where one becomes all and all become one 31

ummi, 7
unity, cut into

-Arab-non-Arab
-aristocrat-abased 28
-brain washer-brain washed 28
-civilized-uncivilized 28
-colonialist-colonialized 28
-deceiver-deceived 28
-eastern-western 28
-employer-laborer 28
-exploiter-exploited 28
-full-hungry 28
-landlord-serf 28
-master-servant 28
-master-slave 28
-noble-common 28
-oppressor-oppressed 28
-powerful-weak 28
-prosperous-wretched 28
-rich-poor 28
-ruler-condemned 28
-spiritual-physical 28
-wealthy-agent 28
-white-black 28
universal concept
-intellectual or subjective truth has found external,

  objective reality 55
universality
  -no distinctions 55
  -no one can be distinguished 55
  -no signs nor symbols giving superiority to an individual 55
  -white, uniform, single-colored, single-patterned flood 55

V
victory 16
vice-gerent (*khalifah*) 20, 21
victims
  -human beings, human society and the revolutionary movement 196

W
war
  -of history, religion vs. religion 197
  -the greatest war, the war with self, *jihad akbar* 137
waswas 210
waswasah 211, 220ff
waswasah-i-khanas 220
water
  -drinking 74
  -liquid in the mouth of a child 74
  -material materiality 74
  -nothing super natural 73
  -not a mysterious thing 73
  -transforms into blood in the body 74
  -transforms into milk in the mother's breast 74
  -struggle in search of 14
  -that which gushes up from the earth 74
Way of Faith 66
weak-sighted 14
weapons 16
weaves, complicated, intricate 14
western ideology 5
'what it has become' 1, 2
'what it was' 2
whiten and harmonize with all colors 28
Whom He desires, one who struggles for God 102
wisdom
  -brought by the Prophets 101
  -consciousness of self 101
  -is a knowledge which familiarizes 'you' with 'you' 126
  -its center of learning is jihad 102
  -its students are the mujahid 102
  -knowledge of primordial nature 126
  -knowledge of the way 101

- -knowledge which produces thinkers 101
- -light and an illumination 101
- -light which God places in the hearts of those He wishes 101
- -opens up the fourth prison 126
- -power which causes you to revolt against your 'self' 126
- -powerful arm to convert and transform you from your self 126
- -requries no literacy 102
- -reveals the inner prison to you 126
- -through the art of love releases the 'self' 126

wolf 26, 27,29,35,41

woman
- -alone 61
- -and among all a 51
- -black Ethopian , a 72
- -black slave 49
- -black who being of such a lowly class, she agitates not the envy of a rival wife 136
- -dress of a 49
- -Ethiopian, an 49
- -female black slave of a 51
- -from a despised and non-honored African race 72
- -mother only in the sacred area of God 72
- -other, the 49
- -slave, a 49
- -slave girl of a , the 72
- -slave of another woman 49
- -who lacked dignity in human systems 50

world view of monotheism
- -God is the Axis of existence 53
- -God is the Center of the universe 53
- -God is the Heart of the universe 53
- -human being is annihilated in the ummah for God 54
- -human being contains no unity of being for only tawhid exists 54
- -human being is a continuous movement 53
- -human being is a particle 53
- -human being is a particle in movement and each movement in a place 53
- -human being is annihilated in people and becomes a universal 54
- -human being is constantly in movement 53
- -human being is just a state 53
- -human being's distance de-

pends on the ray chosen 53
  - -human being's distance from Him is constant 53
  - -interpreted through movement 53
  - -monasticism of the human being is in society not a monastary 54
  - -there is no constancy for the human being 53
  - -ummah are in one direction of one rank 54

worship
  - -means grind your 'self' 99

worshipper of the *taghut* 25

wretched
  - -are wretched from their mother's womb 197

Y

you
  - -a doubt, a vacillation 127
  - -a particle of ardency 42
  - -a possibility, an absurdity 127
  - -a tiny particle of iron filings 41
  - -achieve self little by little 55
  - -existence without howness 127
  - - anti-human powers 219
  - -are a stranger 55
  - -are being carried forward 41
  - -are flying 41
  - -are only a direction 42
  - -are only a movement 42
  - -are still endangered 187
  - -as long as you as you are present 46
  - -as long as you remain you 55
  - -as victor 187
  - bear witness to your own death 30
  - -become all 28
  - -become a being who senses non-being 29
  - -become a drop lost in the sea 28
  - -become a minute particle 28
  - -become like a blade of grass 28
  - -become in the end 29
  - -become the people 28
  - -be one 29
  - -be resurrected in the desert 30
  - -be the pilgrim to your own grave 30

  - -bury your individuality 31
  - -call people to the hajj 69
  - -descend step by step 43
  - -do not become proud in

your greatest victory 187
-drop, a 43
-face Him 42
-feel you are growing larger than the self 41
-give people direction 69
-grow closer to God 43
-have no place in the sacred area 47
-join the people in the whirlpool of the masses 57
-live like Abraham in your own age 68
-make your land a sacred land 69
-move and sense your own annihilation 42
-move away from self 42
-move forward having no right to step back 42
-move towards the ascent 41
-move your people 68
-must find the way correctly 44
-no longer fit within your form 41
-nothing 41
pour down like a flood 43
-prisoner of four determinisms 125
-rightly hear your heart beat 41
-sacrifice yourself to the ummah 55
-sense eternity 46
-sense not your feet 41
-sense your two arms 41
-stand still as an observer 55
-take direction before him 48
-vanish in him 42
-who stand in Abraham's station 68
'youness' of you 27
'yourness' of your being human 27

Z
Zamzam 81ff